XEROX

Xerox University Microfilms
Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

WESTERN AMERICANA

Reproduced from the original in the collection of
THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN LIBRARIES

UNIV. OF MICH.

The Lakeside Classics

Echoes of the Past About California

By General John Bidwell

In Camp and Cabin

By Rev. John Steele

EDITED BY

MILO MILTON QUAIFE

SECRETARY AND EDITOR OF
THE BURTON HISTORICAL COLLECTION

CHICAGO
The Lakeside Press
R. R. DONNELLEY & SONS CO.
Christmas, 1928

James E. Duffield
4-1938

Publishers' Preface

WITH the present volume we start, in a manner, a new series of *The Lakeside Classics*. The Fates, personified by Expectancy and Appreciation on the part of the readers, and Pride on our part, have decreed that these annual volumes shall continue, and we gracefully bow to the inevitable.

In continuing, we have decided to make no material change in their size or format. To change the size and character of each year's volume, in order that we might present to our readers the very latest fashion of the printed book, is not the purpose of these volumes. Such examples would be of momentary interest and would perhaps make a record of the changes of fashion in good bookmaking. But such books are often unhandy to read, inconvenient on the book shelf, and would show in their formats no common relationship. The original purpose of these volumes was to present a well made, practical book, free from eccentricities and we still cling to the old-fashioned idea that books worth reading should be handy to hold, and companions

011-4-38 nm.

that are easy to carry with us. Yet the art of bookmaking has advanced during these twenty-five years, and as buildings which have been added to from time to time show in their additions certain changes and refinements which mark their date, and which not only do not mar their beauty but rather add charm to the whole, so the publishers have recognized the change of taste in bookmaking and have made a few changes in detail which they believe somewhat improve the volumes, but which will not take away in any degree their individuality.

The Caslon Old Style has been substituted in the body type for the plainer Old Style. The type founder, Caslon, cut these types during the middle of the eighteenth century, and for readability and dignity they have never been excelled. During the last century these rugged and chaste faces were submerged by the fashion for the so-called "modern" types, and their beauty was not again recognized and their use did not again become general until the beginning of the present century. The Caslon Old Style has been chosen rather than one of the faces recently designed and inspired by some of the old masters, because, upon the whole, it seems to accomplish better one of the purposes of this book—an easily read page.

The double rules used both above and below the running heads in the previous volumes have now been omitted. We have felt for some time that these rules rather overweighed the page and that their omission would make the page more pleasing. The black letter used in these headings has been retained. The origin of this face is in doubt. It was first introduced into America by John Wilson senior, of John Wilson & Sons, Boston, who imported these fonts from England. They appeared in the first Caslon broadsides, dated 1834, but it is still undecided whether Caslon originated these fonts or copied them from one of the Dutch type founders. This face has been retained because it is not only a distinctive feature of these books, but because the face has been a tradition with the Press for over half a century. Ever since the adoption of the name in 1871, the words "The Lakeside Press" have always appeared on title pages and imprints in this "Priory Text."

The change in the color of the binding may invoke more criticism. The dark green cloth heretofore used has been eminently satisfactory, and the change in color has been made not to improve the appearance, but in a manner to mark off the series of the first twenty-five volumes which was completed last year. These twenty-five volumes have made a series of books distinct in the annals of publishing, and by changing the color of the cloth, we feel they have been given a definition that a continuous use of the same cloth would not give.

To promise that the next quarter of a century will see completed another series of twenty-five volumes is a commitment the publishers are loath to undertake. Certainly during the period there will be many changes in the personnel of the management of the Press and many names on the list of recipients will be erased by the Inevitable Hand, but if the traditions of any press in America will continue for this length of time, we believe those of The Lakeside Press will. Its apprenticeship system, the careful selection of new employees, the open door for promotion and responsibility to all who show character and capacity, and the *esprit de corps* of the entire organization of over 3,000 employees hold as great a promise of continuation of tradition as any commercial organization can.

The question of subject matter becomes more difficult each year. The popularity of these volumes and the list of readers are constantly increasing and this has inspired some of the commercial publishers to hunt up unpublished journals and rare books of historical interest for publication. This indirect compliment has proved somewhat of an embarrassment in putting upon the market books that would have been suitable for these series. We can promise no continuity of subject matter, either as to time or place. Our only object will be to continue to attempt to find an historical subject of human interest, which because it has not been previously published or because of its rarity will come fresh to the average reader.

It is natural that after publishing Manley's account of his trip to California during the gold rush, we should turn to a story of the Forty-Niners. Unfortunately, no one journal has been found which gives a complete picture of that stirring life. We would refer those readers who desire such a picture to the writings of Bret Harte and Stewart Edward White. In the "Echoes of the Past" by Bidwell (a man who became a substantial citizen of California in after years) and "In Camp and Cabin" by Steele, we hope the reader will find material that will give some interesting episodes of the trials and experiences of the gold hunter and will stir his interest to further reading of that period.

We are fortunate that Mr. Milo M. Quaife has agreed to continue as editor of these volumes, and because of his wide knowledge of the literature of our early western history, and of his scholarly editing of these narratives we owe to Mr. Quaife a great debt.

It is our hope that these volumes will continue to be acceptable to the friends and patrons of the Press.

The Publishers

Christmas, 1928.

Contents

CHAPTER PAGE

HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION xv

ECHOES OF THE PAST

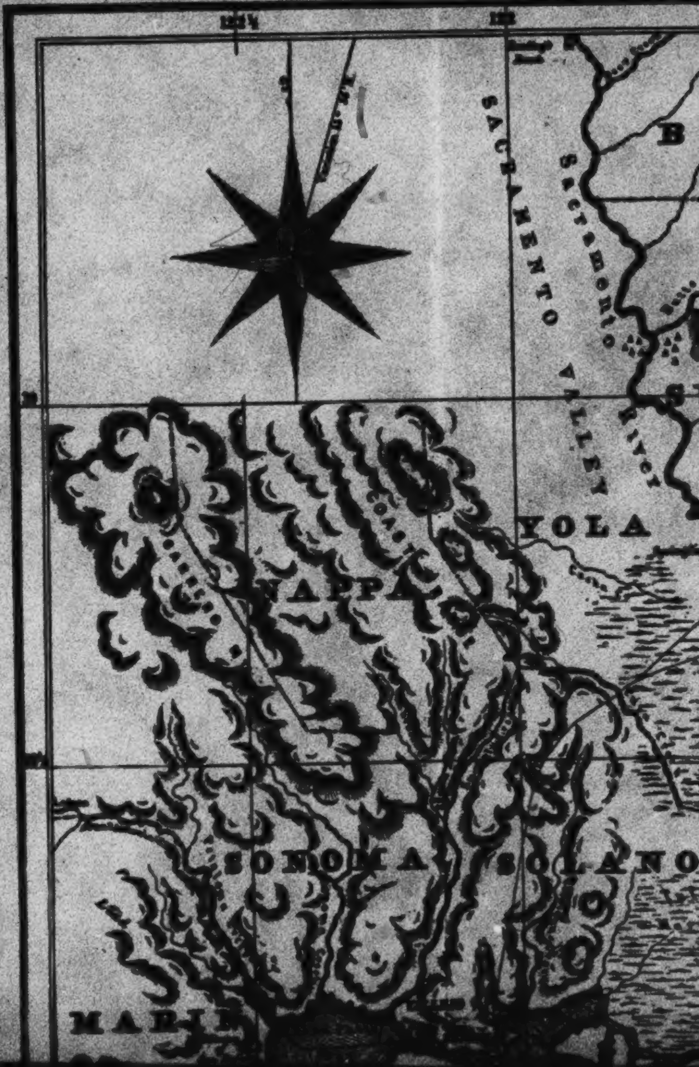
1—Early Pioneering 5
2—Across the Plains 13
3—California in the Forties 66
4—The Discovery of Gold 95

IN CAMP AND CABIN

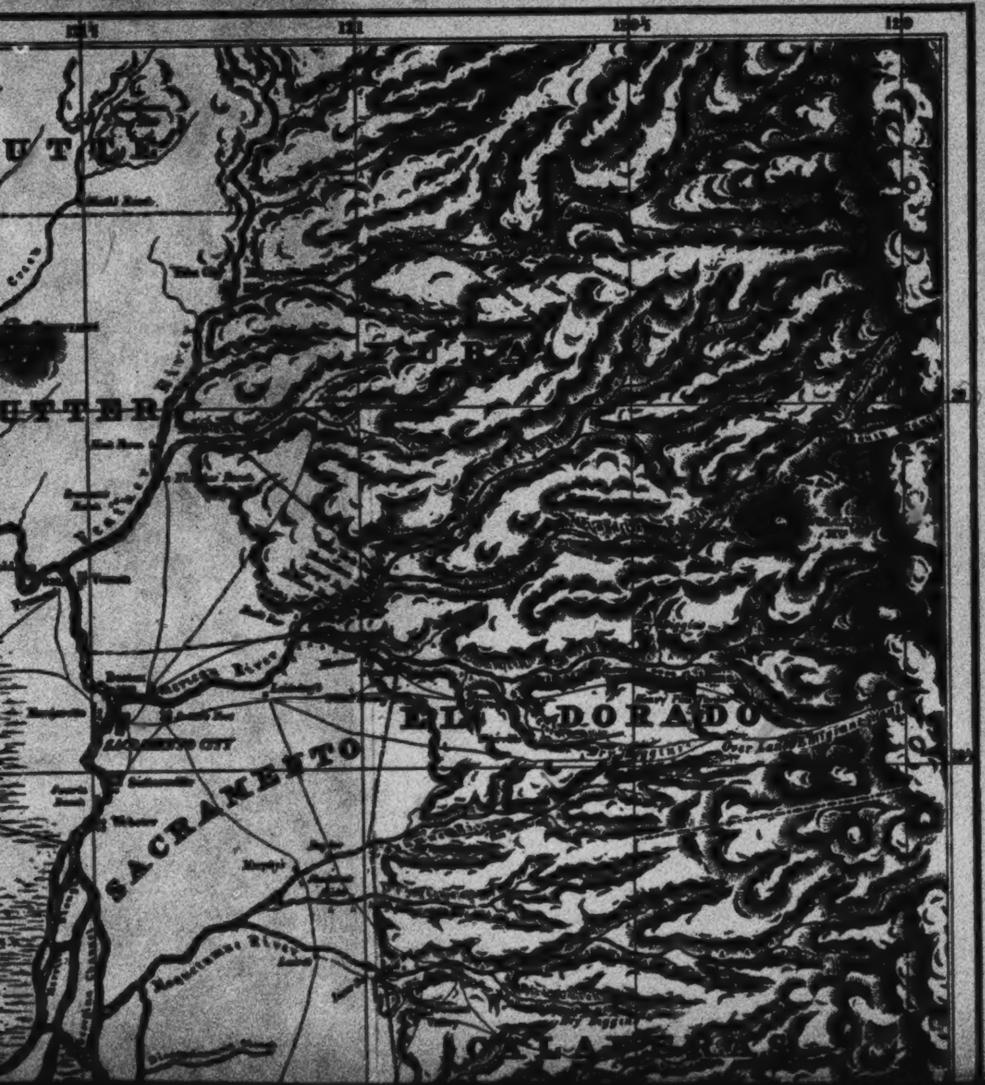
AUTHOR'S INTRODUCTION TO ORIGINAL EDITION 117
1—I Become a Gold Miner 119
2—Further Mining Adventures 138
3—Expedition to Feather River 149
4—The Return from Feather River . . 174
5—Removal to American River 203
6—A New Partnership 222
7—An Excursion to Los Angeles . . . 236
8—Spanish Flat and Texas Bar 259
9—A Native Tragedy 286
10—Indian Government and Customs . 305
11—Return to Wisconsin 323

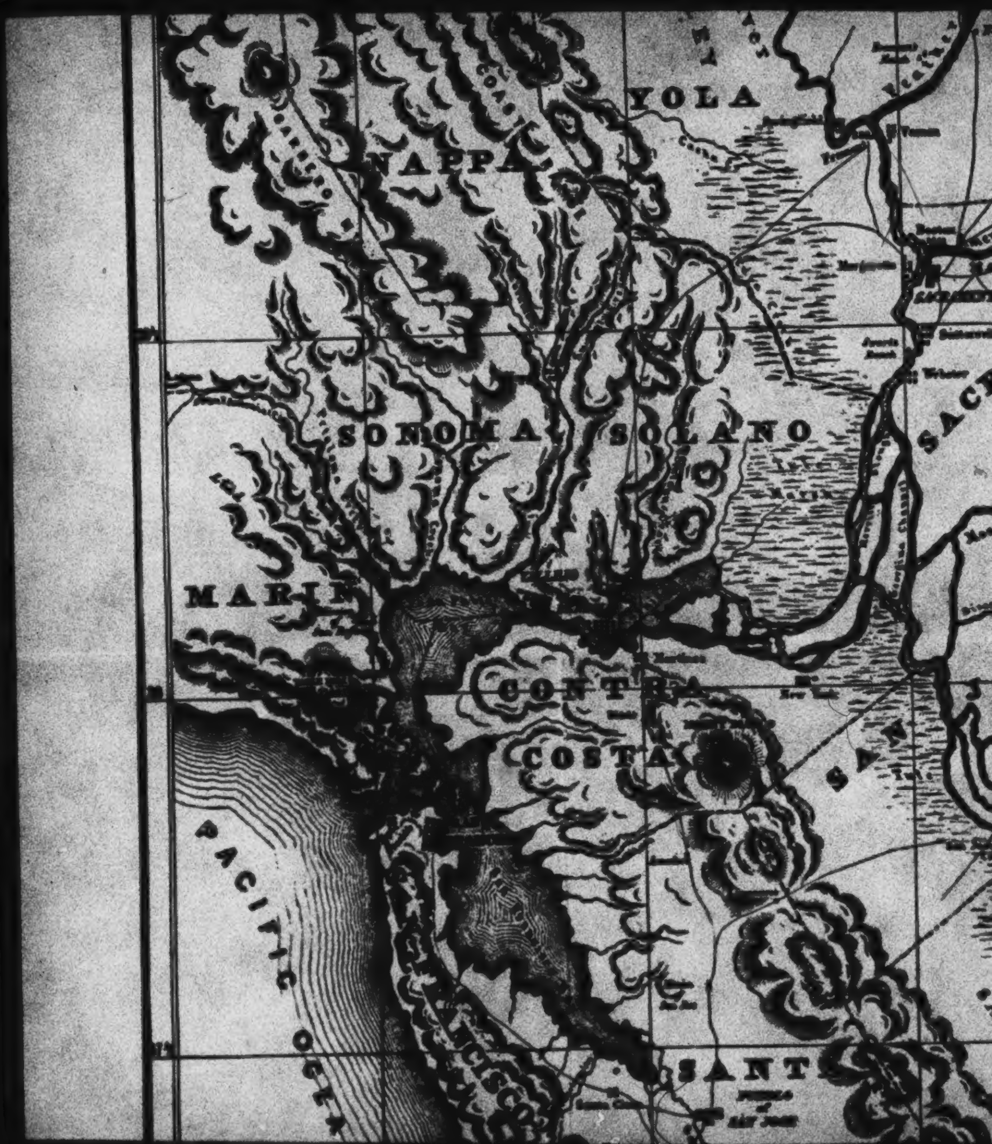
INDEX 359

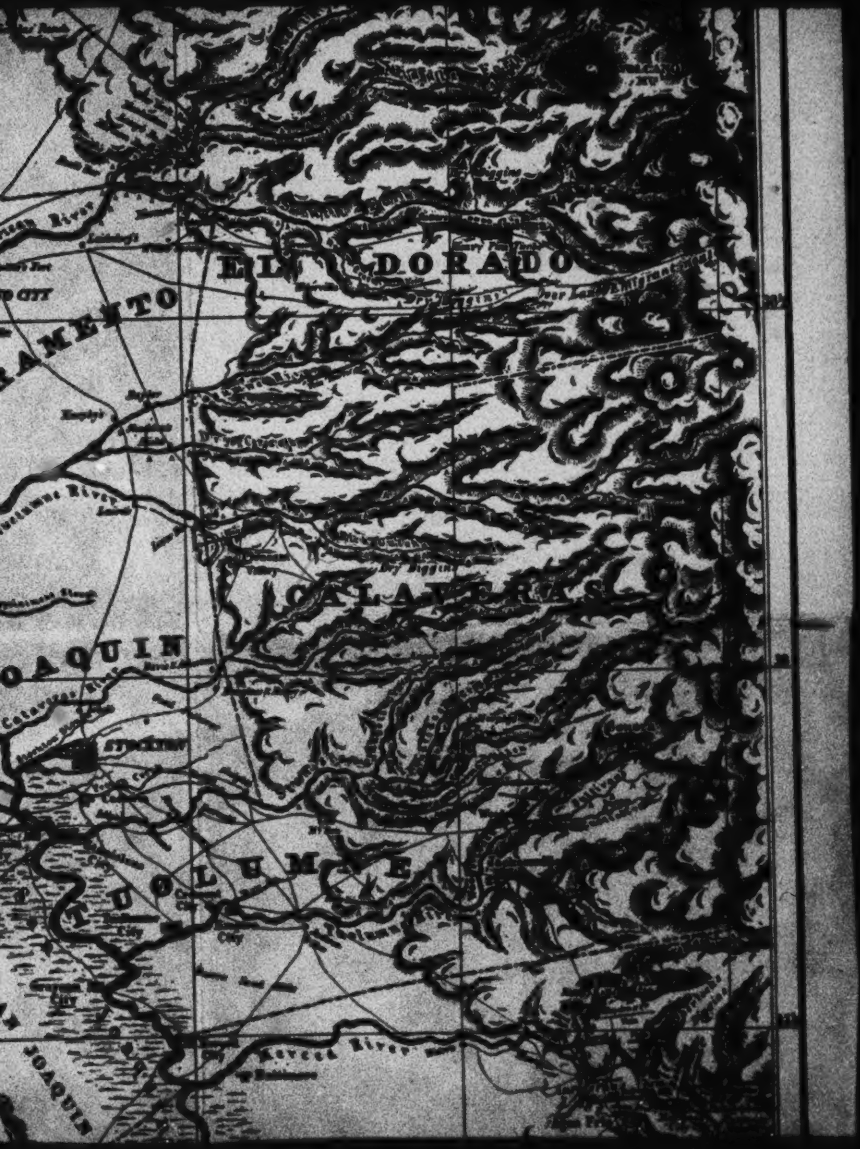
Historical Introduction



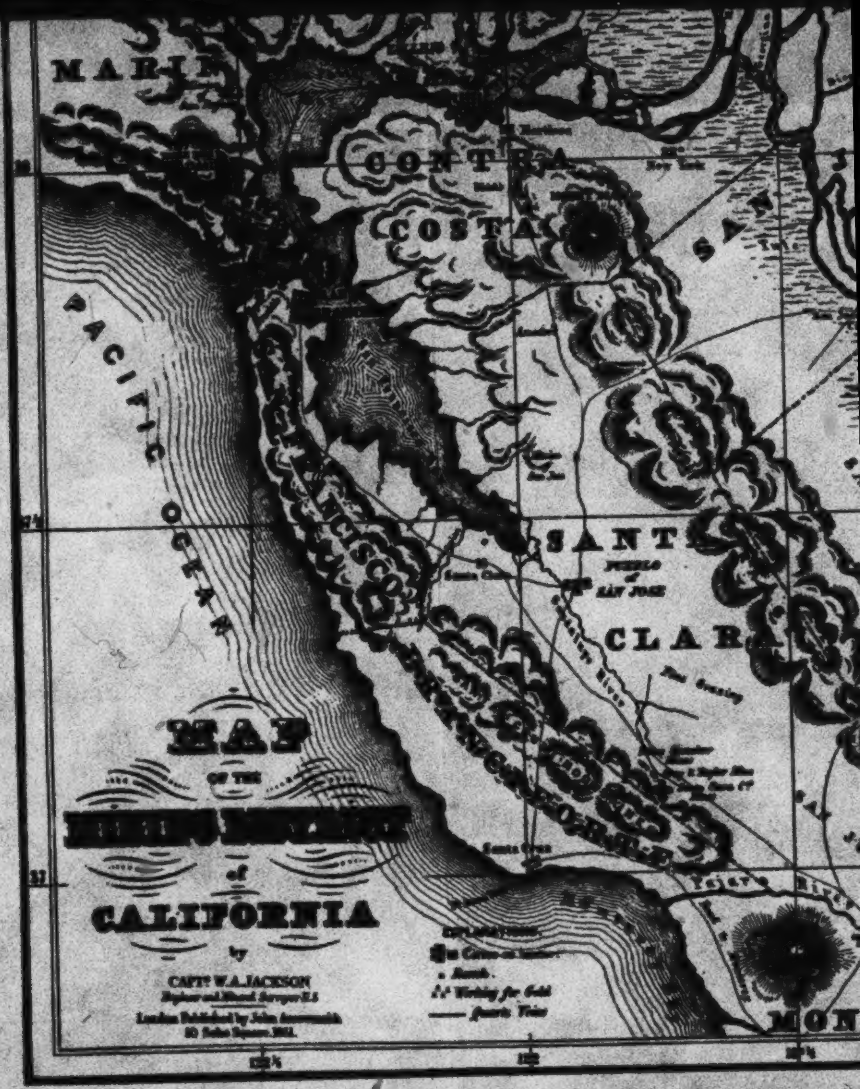
123¼
122
SACRAMENTO VALLEY
Sacramento River
B
YOLA
NAPPA
COAST
SONOMA
SOLANO
MARI


121½
121
120½
120
SUTTER
YUBA
SUTTER
Feather River
American River
SACRAMENTO CITY
EL DORADO
Over Land Emigrant Trail
Dry Diggings
SACRAMENTO
Mokelumne River
CALAVERAS

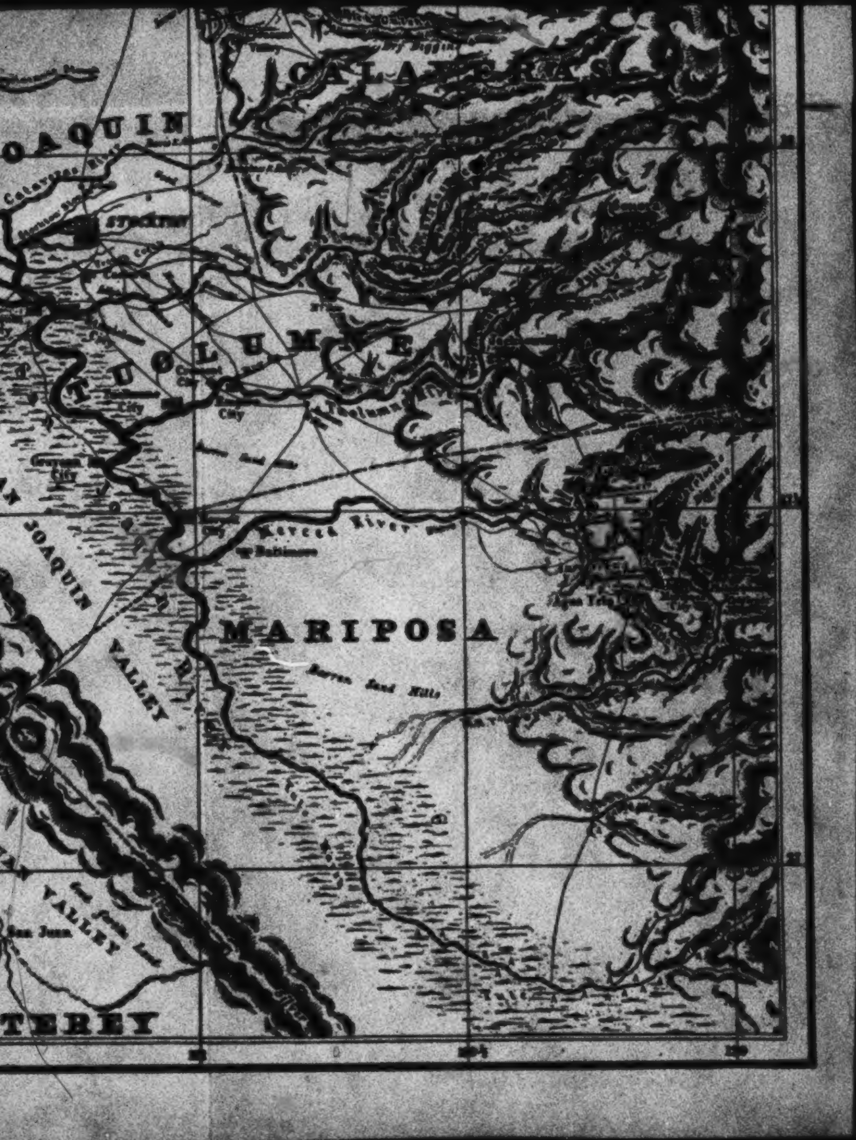

YOLA
NAPPA
SONOMA
SOLANO
MARIN
CONTRA
COSTA
SAN
SAC
PACIFIC OCEAN
FRANCISCO
SANT
Tule Marsh

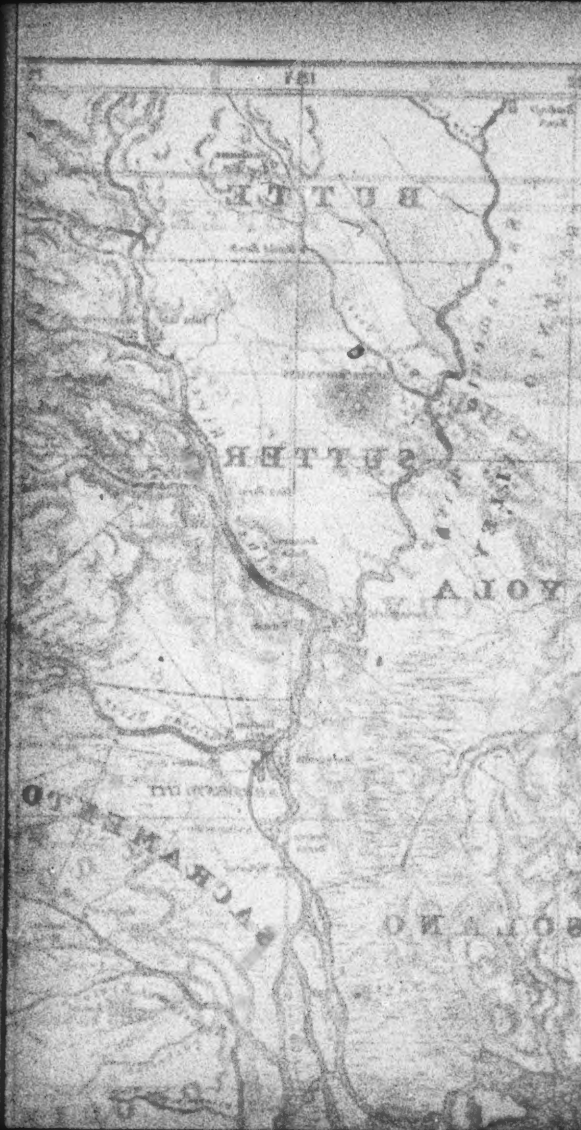


EL DORADO
RAMENTO
Dry Diggings
Over Land Emigrant Trail
Mokelumne River
CALAVERAS
Dry Diggings
JOAQUIN
OAQUIN
Calaveras River
STOCKTON
TUOLUMNE
Tuolumne River
Merced River
JOAQUIN


MARIN
CONTRA
COSTA
SAN
SANTA
CLARA
PUEBLO of SAN JOSE
PACIFIC OCEAN
SAN FRANCISCO
Guadalupe River
Santa Cruz
Pajaro River
MON
38
37½
37
122½
122
MAP
OF THE
[illegible]
of
CALIFORNIA
by
CAPT. W.A. JACKSON
Engineer and Mineral Surveyor U.S.
London Published by John Arrowsmith
10 Soho Square 1851.
EXPLANATION.
Gold Cañon or Ravine
Ranch.
Working for Gold
Quartz Vein

UNIV. OF MICH.


CALAVERAS
JOAQUIN
Calaveras River
STOCKTON
TUOLUMNE
Tuolumne River
JOAQUIN
VALLEY
Merced River
Baltimore
MARIPOSA
Barren Sand Hills
VALLEY
San Juan
TEREY


BUTTE
SUTTER
YOLO
SACRAMENTO
SOLANO

Historical Introduction

IN the preceding volume of *The Lakeside Classics* attention was turned to the California gold rush of 1849, and to the overland journey of William L. Manly. In the volume now presented to the reader we return to the same general field with recitals of the experiences of two other migrants from the Middle West to California, John Bidwell and John Steele.

John Bidwell was a native of New York, being born in Chautauqua County on August 5, 1819. When he was ten years of age his parents removed to Erie County, Pennsylvania, and two years later to Ashtabula County, Ohio. Here and in Darke County (whither they subsequently removed) the boy grew to manhood, and from Ohio at the age of twenty years he set out, as his narrative records, on a career of western adventure and sojourn which was to continue to the end of his life. After visiting Iowa Territory and locating for a short time in the Platte Purchase of northwestern Missouri, he became in 1840-41 a leader of the first real overland party of American settlers to enter California — "the advance guard of the irresistible march of the American people westward."[1]

It affords interesting food for present-day reflection that despite ample time for preparation and acquiring of information, no one knew the way from Missouri to California, nor did any of the party who persevered in the journey realize the fact when they had arrived there. The California to which Bidwell came was the California of the old régime —of mission stations and padres and Arcadian simplicity of life. The newcomer was one of the best examples of the new American society which was shortly to displace all this. A man of both physical and intellectual vigor, who early assumed a prominent part in affairs, Bidwell's residence in California from 1841 on qualified him to describe with first-hand authority the conditions which the later Argonauts were to encounter. His narrative was not written until almost half a century after the period it deals with, and the thoughtful reader will take proper cognizance of this fact. Yet seldom does an abler chronicler assume the task of describing events in which he has borne a part, and as a source of information upon the California of the forties its value is undoubted.

---

[1] Theodore H. Hittell, *History of California* (San Francisco, 1885) III, 331.

Bidwell lived until the fourth of April, 1900, and during almost sixty years he was one of California's foremost citizens. He bore an active part in Frémont's Bear Flag revolt of 1846 and in the subsequent American conquest of California. In 1849 he purchased Rancho Chico, a domain of some 22,000 acres of land in modern Butte County which had been granted to William Dickey by the Mexican authorities in 1844. Here he made his home throughout the remainder of his life, developing and administering his splendid estate. The ranch fronted four miles on the Sacramento River and extended to the foothills of the Sierra Nevadas, a distance of fifteen miles. Within its limits are some of the most fertile and beautiful valley lands that can be found, and Bidwell possessed both the means and the taste to develop their possibilities to the utmost. The estate was in itself a large community, having, when organized, no less than twenty subdivisions or ranches. Besides wheat and livestock, vast quantities of fruit and nuts were raised. At the time of Bidwell's death his several orchards numbered over 115,000 trees, while his vineyards covered some 200 acres of ground. At different times several packing houses and canneries were operated, and the season's output of preserved fruit frequently ran to 350,000 cases. Along with these operations, hundreds of head of cattle and horses, thousands of hogs and sheep, and tens of thousands of bushels of grain were being produced. Such an establishment necessarily required the services of a large number of people, and from the activities dependent upon Bidwell's establishment the city of Chico developed.

Throughout his life Bidwell was actively interested in civic affairs. His participation in the movement for California's independence has already been noted. In 1863 he was appointed brigadier-general of the State Militia. He served as delegate to several national nominating conventions and as a member of the Thirty-ninth Congress (1865–67). In later years he was actively identified with the Prohibition party, being its presidential nominee in the campaign of 1892.

In 1868 General Bidwell married Miss Annie Kennedy of Washington and the home to which he brought her became a noted center of hospitality. Numbered among its guests were such men as Asa Gray, Sir Joseph Hooker, John Muir, and David Starr Jordan. The range of General Bidwell's friendships may be suggested by putting in proximity to these names the statement that at his funeral four of the pallbearers were Rancho Chico Indians, three of whom had been unclad savages when he first became owner of the place; while little Indian children decorated the grave with wild flowers which they had gathered for this purpose.

The narrative we reproduce seems to have been written in the year 1889. It early attracted widespread attention, being published serially in *The Century Magazine* in 1890. At a date subsequent to General Bidwell's death, apparently, it was reprinted as a pamphlet of ninety-one pages by the press of the Chico *Advertiser*. Copies of this pamphlet are now difficult to obtain and for the present reprinting the one preserved in the Library of Congress has been utilized.

No less capable and high-minded than Bidwell, apparently, was John Steele of Columbia County, Wisconsin, whose after life was passed as a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He was born in Middleton County, New York, March 22, 1832. Precisely when he removed to Wisconsin we have not learned, but he was living in Columbia County when, in the spring of 1850, barely eighteen years of age, he joined an overland train for California. In later years he published a narrative of his experiences on the overland passage under the title *Across the Plains in 1850.*

Steele's party arrived at Nevada City on September 23, 1850, and with this date begins his present narrative dealing with his experience of almost three years as a gold miner. The experiences of no two miners were precisely identical, of course, but Steele's story probably comes as near being typical of the common run of miners' experiences as any that could be presented. It affords an excellent picture of the hazards and thrills, the joys and disappointments suffered by the Argonauts, and chiefly for this reason it has been selected for reprinting in this volume of *The Lakeside Classics.*

Although Steele kept a contemporary day by day journal, his narrative, like Bidwell's, was not prepared until after the lapse of several decades. It represents, therefore, a personal narrative written out almost half a century after the event, with the aid of a contemporary diary or journal. It will be evident to the reader, however, that to a certain extent the author turned historian and wrote of things outside the realm of his own first-hand experience and knowledge. Yet so closely, apparently, did he rely upon the journal in preparing it that much of the jerky, unfinished literary style of the latter was transferred to the published narrative; and despite a considerable amount of amendment by the present editor traces of this journalistic style of composition are still plentiful throughout the present version. The work was published at Lodi, Wisconsin, in 1901, as a pamphlet of eighty-one pages, entitled *In Camp and Cabin*. The author's own introduction states the best possible reason for printing it. "This journal," he says, "written without thought of publication, had been laid aside through all the intervening years. Recently, having occasion to refer to it, the author was impressed with the fact that here was faithfully delineated the everyday life and experience of the average miner, and under conditions which only California, in that early day, could furnish."

Subsequent to his return to Wisconsin, Steele devoted some time to improving his education (he had taught school before going west). In December, 1855, he married Miss Rebecca Ford and soon removed to Mount Vernon, Missouri, where he engaged in teaching. The Civil War broke up his school and our author's abolition sentiments compelled his departure from Missouri. He recruited for the army for a time and in the spring of 1864 enlisted in an Illinois regiment, his term of service continuing until October, 1865. In

1867 he joined the West Wisconsin Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and after several pastorates was sent as a missionary to New Mexico. After seven years of service here, he returned to his home Conference, where he held pastorates in various places. The last dozen years of his life were passed at Lodi, and here he died, October 6, 1905.

As with former volumes of the series, no pretense is made that the narratives reprinted are precise copies of their respective original editions; on the contrary, in such matters as supplying chapter divisions and titles, in paragraphing, punctuation, and other details, the editor has exercised his own discretion, conceiving it to be his function, while carefully preserving the original meaning of the author, to introduce such emendations as may tend to present his narrative to the reader in a guise as attractive as possible. The scholar whose needs demand precise rendering will resort, as heretofore, to the original editions, which he will commonly be at no loss to locate; the general reader, for whom, primarily, *The Lakeside Classics* volumes are prepared, will enjoy more, we are persuaded, the rendering here presented.

M. M. Quaife

Detroit Public Library,
September, 1928

Echoes of the Past

Echoes of The Past

An Account of the First Emigrant Train
to California, Fremont in the Con-
quest of California, the Discov-
ery of Gold and Early
Reminiscences

BY THE LATE
GENERAL JOHN BIDWELL

Price 25c

Published by the Chico Advertiser, Chico, California

Echoes of the Past

Chapter I

EARLY PIONEERING

IN the spring of 1839—living at the time in the western part of Ohio—being then in my twentieth year, I conceived a desire to see the great prairies of the West, especially those most frequently spoken of, Illinois, Iowa, and Missouri. Emigration from the East was tending westward, and settlers had already begun to invade those rich fields.

Starting on foot to Cincinnati, ninety miles distant, I fortunately got a chance to ride most of the way on a wagon loaded with produce. My outfit consisted of about $75, the clothes I wore, and a few others in a knapsack, which I carried in the usual way strapped upon my shoulders, for in those days travelers did not have valises and trunks. Though traveling was considered dangerous, I had nothing more formidable than a pocket knife. From Cincinnati I went down the Ohio River by steamboat to the Mississippi River, up the Mississippi to St. Louis, and thence to Burlington, in what was then the territory of Iowa.[1] Those were bustling days on the western rivers, which were then the chief highways of travel. The scene at the boat landing I recall as particularly lively and picturesque. Many passengers would save a lot by helping to "wood the boat," *i. e.*, by carrying wood down the bank and throwing it down on the boat, a special ticket being issued on that condition. It was very interesting to see the long line of passengers coming up the gang-plank, each with two or three sticks of wood on his shoulders. An anecdote is told of an Irishman who boarded a western steamer and wanted to know the fare to St. Louis, and being told, asked: "What do you charge for 150 pounds of freight?" Upon learning the price, a small amount, he announced that he would go as freight. "All right," said the captain, "put him down in the hold and lay some flour barrels on him to keep him down."

In 1839 Burlington had perhaps not over 200 inhabitants, though it was the capital of Iowa Territory. After consultation with the governor, Robert Lucas,[2] of Ohio, I concluded to go into the interior and select a tract of land on the Iowa River. In those days one was permitted to take up 160 acres, and where practicable it was usual to take part timber and part prairie. After working awhile in putting up a log house—until all the people in the neighborhood became ill with fever and ague—I concluded to move on and strike out to the south and southwest into Missouri. I traveled across country, sometimes by the sun, without road or trail. There were houses and settlements, but they were scattered; sometimes one would have to go twenty miles to find a place to stay at night. The principal game was the prairie hen; the prairie wolf also abounded. Continuing southwest and passing through Huntsville, I struck the Missouri River near

---

[1] Iowa Territory was set off from Wisconsin Territory by an act of Congress passed June 12, 1838.

---

[2] Robert Lucas, who had been governor of Ohio from 1832 to 1836 was in 1838 appointed the first governor of Iowa Territory. Temporarily the capital was fixed at Burlington, which was, of course, on the eastern border of Iowa. Before long a permanent seat of government was selected farther west to which the name Iowa City was given. The state government was removed thither in 1841. The stone capitol building which was erected for its accommodation is still in use as the administrative center of the State University of Iowa. Burlington, which had been successively the capital of Wisconsin and of Iowa has always remained one of the flourishing cities of the latter state.

Keytesville, Chariton County. Thence I continued up the north side of the river till the westernmost settlement was reached; this was in Platte County. The Platte Purchase, as it was called, had been recently bought from the Indians, and was newly but thickly settled, on account of its proximity to navigation, its fine timber, good water and unsurpassed fertility.

On the route I traveled I cannot recall seeing an emigrant wagon in Missouri. The western movement which subsequently filled Missouri and other western states and overflowed into the adjoining territories, had then hardly begun, except as to Platte County. The contest in Congress over the Platte Purchase,[8] which by increasing the area of Missouri gave more territory to slavery, called wide attention to that charming region. The anti-slavery sentiment even at that date ran quite high. This was, I believe, the first addition to slave territory after the Missouri Compromise. But slavery won. The rush that followed in the space of one or two years filled the most desirable part of the Purchase to overflowing. The imagination could not conceive a finer country—lovely, rolling, and fertile, wonderfully productive, beautifully arranged for settlement, part prairie and part timber. The land was unsurveyed. Every settler had aimed to locate half a mile from his neighbor, and there was as yet no conflict. Peace and contentment reigned. Nearly every place seemed to have a beautiful spring of clear cold water. The hills and prairies and the level places were alike covered with a black and fertile soil. I cannot recall seeing an acre of poor ground in Platte County. Of course there was intense longing on the part of the people of Missouri to have the Indians removed and a corresponding desire, as soon as the purchase was consummated, to get possession of the beautiful land. It was in some sense, perhaps, a kind of Oklahoma movement. Another feature was the abundance of wild honey-bees. Every tree that had a hollow in it seemed to be a bee tree, and every hollow was full of rich, golden honey. A singular fact which I learned from old hunters was that the honey-bee was never found more than seventy or eighty miles in advance of the white settlements on the frontier. On this attractive land I set my affections, intending to make it my home.

---

[8] The western boundary of Missouri when admitted to statehood was a due north and south line drawn through Kansas City, the triangle of land which is enclosed by this line on the east, the Missouri River on the west, and the northern boundary of the state on the north, being then a reservation of the Sauk and Fox Indians. It was later desired to extinguish the native title and add this land to the state of Missouri. Since, however, it lay north of the parallel of 36° 30′ and Missouri was a slave state, to do so involved an infringement of the Missouri Compromise restriction of 1820. In 1836 Congress passed a bill, notwithstanding, providing for the purchase, and in 1837 it was formally annexed to the state. Out of the Platte Purchase, as it was commonly called, six counties were eventually carved.

On my arrival, my money being all spent, I was obliged to accept the first thing that offered, and I began teaching school in the country about five miles from the town of Weston, which was located on the north side of the Missouri River and about four miles above Fort Leavenworth in Kansas Territory. Possibly some may suppose it did not take much education to teach a country school at that period in Missouri. The rapid settlement of that new region had brought together people of all classes and conditions, and had thrown into juxtaposition almost every phase of intelligence as well as illiteracy. But there was no lack of self-reliance or native shrewdness in any class, and I must say I learned to have a high esteem for the people, among whom I found warm and lifelong friends.

But even in Missouri there were drawbacks. Rattlesnakes and copperheads were abundant. One man, it was said, found a place to suit him, but on alighting from his horse so many snakes greeted him that he decided to go farther. At his second attempt, finding more snakes instead of fewer, he left the country altogether. I taught school there in all about a year. My arrival was in June, 1839, and in the fall of that year the surveyors came on to lay out the country; the lines ran every way, sometimes through a man's house, sometimes through his barn, so that there was much confusion and trouble about boundaries, etc. By the favor of certain men, and by paying a small amount for a little piece of fence here and a small clearing there, I got a claim, and proposed to make it my home, and have my father remove there from Ohio.

In the following summer, 1840, the weather was very hot, so that during the vacation I could do but little work on my place, and needing some supplies—books, clothes, etc. —I concluded to take a trip to St. Louis, which I did by way of the Missouri River. The distance was 600 miles by water; the down trip occupied two days, and was one of the most delightful experiences of my life. But returning, the river being low and full of snags, and the steamboat heavily laden—the boats were generally lightly loaded going down—we were continually getting on sandbars, and were delayed nearly a month.

This trip proved to be the turning point in my life, for while I was gone a man had "jumped" my land. Generally in such cases public sentiment was against the jumper, and it was decidedly so in my case. But the scoundrel held on. He was a bully—had killed a man in Callaway County—and everybody seemed afraid of him. Influential friends of mine tried to persuade him to let me have eighty acres, half of the claim. But he was stubborn, and said that all he wanted was just what the law allowed him. Unfortunately for me, he had the legal advantage. I had worked some now and then on the place, but had not actually lived on it. The law required a certain residence, and that the preëmptor should be twenty-one years of age or a man of family. I was neither, and could do nothing. Naturally all I had earned had been spent upon the land, and when it was taken I lost about everything I had. There being no possibility of getting another claim to suit me, I resolved to go elsewhere when spring should open.

Chapter 2

ACROSS THE PLAINS

IN November or December of 1840, while still teaching school in Platte County, I came across a Frenchman named Roubidoux,[4] who said he had been to California. He had been a trader in New Mexico, and had followed the road traveled by traders from the frontier of Missouri to Santa Fé. He had probably gone through what is now New Mexico and Arizona into California by the Gila River trail used by the Mexicans. His description of California was of the superlative degree favorable, so much so that I resolved if possible to see that wonderful land, and with others helped to get up a meeting at Weston and invited him to make a statement before it in regard to the country. At that time when a man moved West, as soon as he was fairly settled he wanted to move again, and naturally every question imaginable was asked in regard to this wonderful country. Roubidoux described it as one of perennial spring and boundless fertility, and laid stress on the countless thousands of wild horses and cattle. He told about oranges, and hence must have been at Los Angeles or the mission of San Gabriel, a few miles from it. Every conceivable question that we could ask him was answered favorably. Generally the first question which a Missourian asked about a country was whether there was any fever and ague. I remember his answer distinctly. He said there was but one man in California that had ever had a chill there, and it was a matter of so much wonderment to the people of Monterey that they went eighteen miles into the country to see him shake. Nothing could have been more satisfactory on the score of health. He said that the Spanish authorities were most friendly, and that the people were the most hospitable on the globe; that you could travel all over California and it would cost you nothing for horses or feed. Even the Indians were friendly. His description of the country made it seem like a paradise.

---

[4] Joseph Robidoux had a trading post on the site of St. Joseph, Missouri, and is regarded as the founder of that city. He was a noted figure in the Indian trade of the Southwest. He died in 1868 at St. Joseph, where he had established himself in trade almost forty years before.

The result was that we appointed a corresponding secretary and a committee to report a plan of organization. A pledge was drawn up in which every signer agreed to purchase a suitable outfit and to rendezvous at Sapling Grove in what is now the state of Kansas, on the ninth of the following May, armed and equipped to cross the Rocky Mountains to California. We called ourselves the Western Emigration Society, and as soon as the pledge was drawn up every one who agreed to come signed his name to it, and it took like wildfire. In a short time, I think within a month, we had about 500 names; we also had correspondence on the subject with people all over Missouri, and even as far east as Illinois and Kentucky, and as far south as Arkansas. As soon as the movement was announced in the papers we had many letters of inquiry and we expected people in considerable numbers to join us. About that time we heard of a man in Jackson County, Missouri, who had received a letter from a person in California named Dr. Marsh speaking favorably of the country, and a copy was published.

Our ignorance of the route was complete. We knew that California lay west, and that was the extent of our knowledge. Some of the maps consulted, supposed of course to be correct, showed a lake in the vicinity of where Salt Lake now is; it was represented as a long lake, three or four hundred miles in extent, narrow and with two outlets, both running into the Pacific Ocean, either apparently larger than the Mississippi River. An intelligent man with whom I boarded—Elam Brown, who until recently lived in California, dying when over ninety years of age—possessed a map that showed these rivers to be large, and he advised me to take tools along to make canoes, so that if we found the country so rough that we could not get along with our wagons we could descend one of these rivers to the Pacific. Even Frémont knew nothing about Salt Lake until 1843, when for the first time he explored it and mapped it correctly, his report being first printed, I believe, in 1845.

This being the first movement to cross the Rocky Mountains to California, it is not surprising that it suffered reverses before we were fairly started. One of these was the publication of a letter in a New York newspaper giving a depressing view of the country for which we were all so confidently longing. It seems that in 1837 or 1838 a man by the name of Farnham, a lawyer, went from New York into the Rocky Mountains for his health. He was an invalid, hopelessly gone with consumption it was thought, and as a last resort he went into the mountains, traveling with the trappers, lived in the open air as the trappers lived, eating only meat as they did, and in two or three years he entirely regained his health; but instead of returning east by the way of St. Louis, as he had gone out, he went down the Columbia River and took a vessel to Monterey and thence to San Blas, making his way through Mexico to New York. Upon his return—in February or March, 1841—he published the letter mentioned. His bad opinion of California was based wholly on his unfortunate experience in Monterey, which I will recount.[5]

In 1840 there lived in California an old Rocky Mountain mountaineer by the name of Isaac Graham. He was injudicious in his talk, and by boasting that the United States or Texas would some day take California, he excited the hostility and jealousy of the people. In those days Americans were held in disfavor by the native Californians on account of the war made by Americans in Texas to wrest Texas from Mexico. The number of Americans in California at this time was very small. When I went to California in 1841 all the foreigners—and all were foreigners except Indians and Mexicans—did not, I think, exceed one hundred; nor was the character of all of them the most prepossessing. Some of them had been trappers in the Rocky Mountains who had not seen civilization for a quarter of a century; others were men who had found their way into California, as Roubidoux had done, by way of Mexico; others still had gone down the Columbia River to Oregon and joined trapping parties in the service of the Hudson's Bay Company going from Oregon to California—men who would let their beards grow down to their knees, and wear buckskin garments made and fringed like those of the Indians, and who considered it a compliment to be told "I took ye for an Injun." Another class of men from the Rocky Mountains were in the habit of making their way by the Mohave Desert south of the Sierra Nevadas into California to steal horses, sometimes driving off four or five hundred at a time. The other Americans, most numerous perhaps, were sailors who had run away from vessels and remained in the country.

---

[5] The author's account of Farnham's career is not entirely adequate. Jason Lee, a missionary to Oregon, returning to the United States, in 1838 toured the then western states lecturing and raising funds for his work. Farnham was then a lawyer living at Peoria, one of the points visited by Lee. So much local enthusiasm was roused by the missionary's discourse that a company was organized to win Oregon for the American flag, and, nineteen in number, the conquerors set out in the spring of 1839, carrying a flag on which the motto, "Oregon or the Grave" had been worked. Farnham was the leader of the band, whose vicissitudes he later recounted in a book which was several times reprinted with varying titles. The narrative is included in R. G. Thwaites (ed.), *Early Western Travels*, comprising Volume XXVIII and a portion of Volume XXIX of this series.

With few exceptions this was the character of the American population when I came to California, and they were not generally a class calculated to gain much favor with the people. Farnham happened to come into the bay of Monterey when this fellow Graham and his confederates, and all others whom the Californians suspected, were under arrest in irons aboard a vessel, ready for transportation to San Blas, in Mexico, whither, indeed, they were taken, and where some of them died in irons. I am not sure that at this time the English had a consul in California; but the United States had none, and there was no one there to take the part of the Americans. Farnham, being a lawyer, doubtless knew the proceedings were illegal. He went ashore and protested against it, but without effect, as he was only a private individual. Probably he was there on a burning hot day, and only saw the dreary sandhills to the east of the old town of Monterey. On arriving in New York he published the letter referred to, describing how Americans were oppressed by the native Californians, and how dangerous it was for Americans to go there. The merchants of Platte County had all along protested against our going and had tried from the beginning to discourage and break up the movement, saying it was the most unheard of, foolish, wild-goose chase that ever entered into the brain of man for 500 people to pull up stakes, leave that beautiful country, and go away out to a region that we knew nothing of. But they made little headway until this letter of Farnham's appeared. They republished it in a paper in the town of Liberty, in Clay County—there being no paper published in Platte County—and sent it broadcast over the surrounding region.

The result was that the people began to think more seriously about the scheme, the membership of the society began dropping off, and it so happened at last that of all the 500 that had signed the pledge I was the only one that got ready; and even I had hard work to do so, for I had barely means to buy a wagon, a gun, and provisions. Indeed, the man who was going with me and who was to furnish the horses, backed out and there I was with my wagon.

During the winter, to keep the project alive, I had made two or three trips into Jackson County, Missouri, always dangerous in winter, when ice was running, by the ferry at Westport Landing, now Kansas City. Sometimes I had to go ten miles farther down—sixty miles from Weston—to a safer ferry at Independence Landing in order to get into Jackson County, to see men who were talking of going to California and to get information.

At the last moment before the time to start for the rendezvous at Sapling Grove—it seemed almost providential—along came a man named George Henshaw, an invalid from Illinois, I think. He was pretty well dressed, was riding a fine black horse, and had ten or fifteen dollars. I persuaded him to let me take his horse and trade him for a yoke of steers to pull the wagon and a sorry-looking, one-eyed mule for him to ride. We went via Weston to lay in some supplies. One wagon and four or five persons here joined us. On leaving Weston, where there had been so much opposition, we were six or seven in number, and nearly half the town followed us for a mile, and some for five or six miles to bid us good-bye, showing the deep interest felt in our journey. All expressed good wishes and desired to hear from us.

When we reached Sapling Grove, the place of rendezvous, in May, 1841, there was but one wagon ahead of us. For the next few days one or two wagons would come each day, and among the recruits were three families from Arkansas. We organized by electing as captain of the company a man named Bartleson from Jackson County, Missouri. He was not the best man for the position, but we were given to understand that if he was not elected captain he would not go; and he had seven or eight men with him, and we did not want the party diminished, so he was chosen. Every one furnished his own supplies. The party consisted of sixty-nine, including men, women, and children. Our teams were of oxen, mules, and horses. We had no cows, as the later emigrants usually had, and the lack of milk was a great privation to the children. It was understood that every one should have not less than a barrel of flour, with sugar and so forth to suit, but I laid in one hundred pounds of flour more than the usual quantity, besides other things. This I did because we were told that when we got into the mountains we probably would get out of bread and have to live on meat alone, which I thought would kill me even if it did not others. My gun was an old flint-lock rifle, but a good one. Old hunters told me to have nothing to do with cap or percussion locks, that they were unreliable, and that if I got my caps or percussion wet I could not shoot, while if I lost my flint I could pick up another on the plains. I doubt whether there was one hundred dollars in the whole party, but all were enthusiastic and anxious to go.

In five days after my arrival we were ready to start, but no one knew where to go, not even the captain. Finally a man came up, one of the last to arrive, and announced that a company of Catholic missionaries were on their way from St. Louis to the Flathead nation of Indians with an old Rocky Mountaineer for a guide, and that if we would wait another day they would be up with us. At first we were independent, and thought we could not afford to wait for a slow missionary party. But when we found that no one knew which way to go, we sobered down and waited for them to come up; and it was well that we did, for otherwise probably not one of us would ever have reached California, because of our inexperience. Afterwards, when we came in contact with Indians, our people were so easily excited that if we had not had with us an old mountaineer the result would certainly have been disastrous.

The name of the guide was Captain Fitzpatrick;[6] he had been at the head of trapping parties in the Rocky Mountains for many years. He and the missionary party went with us as far as Soda Springs, now in Idaho, whence they turned north to the Flathead nation. The party consisted of three Roman Catholic priests—Fathers De Smet,[7]

---

[6] Captain Thomas Fitzpatrick was a veteran Rocky Mountain trader, who had been a partner in the Rocky Mountain Fur Company, and whose reputation for adventurous daring was widespread. Upon the decline of the fur trade he acted as guide for various exploring expeditions, being commissioned captain, and later major. In 1850 he was serving as Indian agent for the upper Platte region. His life story, if recorded, would make a volume of rare interest.

[7] Father Pierre Jean De Smet was born in Belgium in 1801, At the age of twenty he came to America to preach religion to the red men, but almost two decades elapsed before—after a long course of preparation—he was enabled to realize his ambition. His present mission to the Flatheads was in response to repeated appeals which representatives of that distant tribe had carried to St. Louis to have a "black robe" sent among them. Father De Smet devoted the remainder of his life to the Indians of the Rocky Mountain region, and concerning them and his experiences he published several volumes which became widely known. The first of these, which deals with the present expedition, was published at Philadelphia in 1843 and is entitled *Letters and Sketches: With a Narrative of a Year's Residence among the Indian Tribes of the Rocky Mountains.* It is reprinted by Thwaites in his *Early Western Travels*, Vol. XXVII.

Point[8] and Mengarini[9]—and ten or eleven French Canadians, and accompanying them were an old mountaineer named John Gray and a young Englishman named Romaine,[10] and also a man named Baker. They seemed glad to have us with them, and we certainly were glad to have their company. Father De Smet had been to the Flathead nation before.[11] He had gone out with a trapping party, and on his return had traveled with only a guide by another route, farther to the north and through hostile tribes. He was a genial gentleman, of fine presence, and one of the saintliest men I have ever known, and I cannot wonder that the Indians were made to believe him divinely protected. He was a man of great kindness and great affability under all circumstances; nothing seemed to disturb his temper. The Canadians had mules and Red River carts, instead of wagons and horses—two mules to each cart, five or six of them—and in case of steep hills they would hitch three or four of the animals to one cart, always working them tandem. Sometimes a cart would go over, breaking everything to pieces, and at such times Father De Smet would be just the same—beaming with good humor.

---

[8] Father Nicolas Point, who was selected to accompany De Smet on the mission to the Flatheads in 1841, spent several years in the western country, where his missionary efforts were attended with much success. He was subsequently sent to Upper Canada, and died at Quebec in 1868.

[9] Father Gregory Mengarini, who was associated with De Smet in founding the Flathead mission, remained in this field until 1850. He then went to the Jesuit College at Santa Clara, California, where he died in 1886.

[10] Romaine was a young Englishman who had already "seen the four quarters of the globe" and who was contributing to his knowledge of geography and his love of adventure by making the present excursion into the western wilderness. Father De Smet, who vainly labored to convert him to Catholicism, testifies to his engaging qualities and states that he was of a good English family.

[11] He had gone out the preceding year to investigate on behalf of his church the prospects for doing missionary work among the Flatheads. As a result of this investigation, the present mission was undertaken.

In general our route[13] lay from near Westport, where Kansas City now is, northwesterly over the prairie, crossing several streams, till we struck the Platte River. Then we followed along the south side of the Platte and a day's journey or so along the South Fork. Here the features of the country became more bold and interesting. Then crossing the South Fork, and following up the north side for a day or so, we went over to the North Fork and camped at Ash Hollow; thence up the north side of that fork, passing those noted landmarks known as the Court House Rocks, Chimney Rock, Scott's Bluffs, etc., till we came to Fort Laramie, a trading post of the American Fur Company, near which was Lupton's Fort, belonging, as I understand, to some rival company; thence after several days we came to another noted landmark called Independence Rock, on a branch of the North Platte called the Sweetwater, which we followed up to the head, soon after striking the Big Sandy, which empties into Green River. Next we crossed Green River to Black Fork, which we followed up till we came to Ham's Fork, at the head of which we crossed the divide between Green and Bear rivers. Then we followed Bear River down to Soda Springs. The waters of Bear Lake discharged through that river, which we continued to follow down on the west side till we came to Salt Lake. Then we went around the north side of the lake and struck out to the west and southwest.

---

[13] It was shortly to become noted as the famous Oregon Trail.

For a time, till we reached the Platte River, one day was much like another. We set forth every morning and camped every night, detailing men to stand guard. Captain Fitzpatrick and the missionary party would generally take the lead and we would follow. Fitzpatrick knew all about the Indian tribes, and when there was any danger we kept in a more compact body, to protect one another. At other times we would be scattered along, sometimes for half a mile or more. We were generally together, because there was often work to be done to avoid delay. We had to make the road, frequently digging down steep banks, filling gulches, removing stones, etc. In such cases everybody would take a spade or do something to help make the roads passable. When we camped at night we usually drew the wagons and carts together in a hollow square and picketed our animals inside the corral. The wagons were common ones and of no special pattern, and some of them were covered. The tongue of one would be fastened to the back of another. To lessen the danger from Indians, we usually had no fires at night and did our cooking in the daytime.

The first incident was a scare we had from a party of Cheyenne Indians just before we reached the Platte River, about two weeks after we set out. One of our men who chanced to be out hunting, some distance from the company and behind us, suddenly appeared without mule, gun, or pistol, and lacking most of his clothes, and in great excitement reported that he had been surrounded by thousands of Indians. The company, too, became excited, and Fitzpatrick tried, but with little effect, to control and pacify them. Every man started his team into a run, till the oxen, like the mules and horses, were in full gallop. Captain Fitzpatrick went ahead and directed them to follow, and as fast as they came to the bank of the river he put the wagons in the form of a hollow square, and had all the animals securely picketed within. After awhile the Indians came in sight. There were only forty of them, but they were well mounted on horses and were evidently a war party, for they had no women except one, a medicine woman. They came up and camped within one hundred yards of us on the river below. Fitzpatrick told us that they would not have come in that way if they were hostile. Our hunter in his excitement said that there were thousands of them, and that they had robbed him of his gun, mule, and pistol. When the Indians had put up their lodges, Fitzpatrick and John Gray, the old hunter mentioned, went out to them and by signs were made to understand that the Indians did not intend to hurt the man or take his mule or gun, but that he was so excited when he saw them that they had to disarm him to keep him from shooting them; they did not know what had become of his pistol or of his clothes, which they said he had thrown off. They surrendered the mule and gun, thus showing that they were friendly. They proved to be Cheyenne Indians. Ever afterwards the man went by the name of Cheyenne Dawson.

As soon as we struck the buffalo country we found a new source of interest. Before reaching the Platte we had seen an abundance of antelopes and elk, prairie wolves and villages of prairie dogs, but only an occasional buffalo. We now began to kill buffaloes for food, and at the suggestion of John Gray, and following the practice of Rocky Mountain white hunters, our people began to kill them just to get the tongues and marrow bones, leaving all the rest of the meat on the plains for the wolves to eat. But the Cheyenne, who traveled ahead of us for two or three days, set us a better example. At their camps we noticed that when they killed buffaloes they took all the meat, everything but the bones. Indians were never wasteful of the buffalo except for the sake of the robes, and then only in order to get the whiskey which traders offered them in exchange.[13] There is no better beef in the world than that of the buffalo; it is also very good jerked—cut into strings and thoroughly dried. It was an easy matter to kill buffaloes after we got to where they were numerous, by keeping out of sight and to the leeward of them. I think I can truthfully say that I saw in that region in one day more buffaloes than I have ever seen of cattle in all my life. I have seen the plains black with them for several days' journey as far as the eye could reach. They seemed to be coming northward continually from the distant plains to the Platte to get water, and would plunge in and swim across by thousands—so numerous that they changed not only the color of the water, but its taste, until it was unfit to drink—but we had to use it.

---

[13] While this statement may represent correctly what Bidwell observed, it is far from possessing general validity.

One night when we were encamped on the south fork of the Platte they came in such droves that we had to sit up and fire guns and make what fires we could to keep them from running over us and trampling us into the dust. We were obliged to go out some distance from the camp to turn them; Captain Fitzpatrick told us that if we did not do this the buffaloes in front could not turn aside for the pressure of those behind. We could hear them thundering all night long; the ground fairly trembled with vast approaching bands, and if they had not been diverted, wagons, animals, and emigrants would have been trodden under their feet. One cannot nowadays describe the rush and wildness of the thing. A strange feature was that when old oxen, tired and sore-footed, got among a buffalo herd, as they sometimes would in the night, they would soon become as wild as the wildest buffalo; and if ever recovered, it was because they could not run so fast as the buffaloes or one's horse. The ground over which the herds traveled was left rather barren, but buffalo grass being short and curling, in traveling over it they did not cut it up as much as they would other kinds.

On the Platte River, on the afternoon of one of the hottest days we experienced on the plains, we had a taste of a cyclone; first came a terrific shower, followed by a fall of hail to the depth of four inches, some of the stones being as large as a turkey's egg, and the next day a waterspout—an angry, huge, whirling cloud column, which seemed to draw its water from the Platte River—passed within a quarter of a mile behind us. We stopped and braced ourselves against our wagons to keep them from being overturned. Had it struck us it would doubtless have demolished us.

Above the junction of the forks of the Platte we continued to pass notable natural formations—first O'Fallon's Bluffs, then Court House Rocks, a group of fantastic shapes to which some of our party started to go. After they had gone what seemed fifteen or twenty miles the huge pile looked just as far off as when they started, and so they turned and came back—so deceptive are distances in the clear atmosphere of the Rocky Mountains. A noted landmark on the North Fork, which we sighted fifty miles away, was Chimney Rock. It was then nearly square, and I think it must have been fifty feet higher than now, though after we passed it a portion of it fell off. Scott's Bluffs are known to emigrants for their picturesqueness. These formations, like those first mentioned, are composed of indurated yellow clay or soft sand rock; they are washed and broken into all sorts of fantastic forms by the rains and storms of ages, and have the appearance of an immense city of towers and castles. They are quite difficult to explore, as I learned by experience in an effort to pursue and kill mountain sheep or bighorns. These were seen in great numbers, but we failed to kill any, as they inhabit places almost inaccessible and are exceedingly wild.

As we ascended the Platte, buffaloes became scarcer, and on the Sweetwater none were to be seen. Now appeared in the distance to the north and west, gleaming under the mantle of perpetual snow, the lofty range known as the Wind River Mountains. It was the first time I had seen snow in summer; some of the peaks were very precipitous, and the view was altogether most impressive. Guided by Fitzpatrick, we crossed the Rockies at or near the South Pass,[14] where the mountains were apparently low. Some years before a man named William Sublette,[15] an Indian fur trader, went to the Rocky Mountains with goods in wagons, and those were the only wagons that had ever been there before us; sometimes we came across the tracks, but generally they were obliterated and thus were of no service.

[14] The famous South Pass had been discovered by fur traders almost twenty years before this, although, as frequently in the annals of exploration, there is some uncertainty as to who the first white man to discover it was. More commonly the credit of the discovery is given to Captain Fitzpatrick, the guide of Bidwell's party. The most recent student of the problem thinks the credit should be awarded to the noted trader, Jedediah S. Smith.

[15] William L. Sublette was born in Kentucky in 1799. In 1818 he removed to St. Charles, Missouri, and shortly thereafter engaged in the western fur trade. He was associated with General Ashley in the Rocky Mountain Fur Company and in 1826 he purchased Ashley's interest and began a career of opposition to the American Fur Company. In 1832 he formed a partnership with Robert Campbell for the Rocky Mountain trade, with which he was connected for a decade. He died in 1845 while en route to Washington.

Approaching Green River in the Rocky Mountains, it was found that some of the wagons, including Captain Bartleson's, had alcohol on board, and that the owners wanted to find trappers in the Rocky Mountains with whom they might effect a sale. This was a surprise to many of us, as there had been no drinking on the way. John Gray was sent ahead to see if he could find a trapping party and he was instructed, if successful, to have them come to a certain place on Green River. He struck a trail, and overtook a party on their way to the buffalo region to lay in provisions—buffalo meat—and they returned, and came and camped on Green River very soon after our arrival, buying the greater part, if not all, of the alcohol, it having first been diluted so as to make what they called whiskey—three or four gallons of water to one gallon of alcohol. Years afterward we heard of the fate of that party; they were attacked by Indians the very first night after they left us and several of them killed, including the captain of the trapping party, whose name was Frapp. The whiskey was probably the cause.

Several years ago when I was going down Weber Cañon, approaching Salt Lake, swiftly borne along on an elegant observation car amid cliffs and ever-rushing streams, something said that night at the camp fire on Green River was forcibly recalled to mind. We had in our party an illiterate fellow named Bill Overton, who in the evening at one of the camp fires loudly declared that nothing in his life had ever surprised him. Of course that raised a dispute. "Never surprised in your life?" "No, I never was surprised." And, moreover, he swore that nothing ever could surprise him. "I should not be surprised," said he, "if I were to see a steamboat come plowing over these mountains this minute." In rattling down the cañon of Weber River it occurred to me that the reality was almost equal to Bill Overton's extravaganza, and I could but wonder what he would have said had he suddenly come upon this modern scene.

As I have said, at Soda Springs—at the northernmost bend of Bear River—our party separated.[16] It was a bright and lovely place. The abundance of soda water, including the intermittent gushing so-called Steamboat Spring; the beautiful fir and cedar covered hills; the huge piles of red or brown sinter, the result of fountains once active but then dry—all these, together with the river, lent a charm to its wild beauty and made the spot a notable one. Here the missionary party were to turn north and go into the Flathead nation. Fort Hall,[17] about forty miles distant on Snake River, lay on their route. There was no road, but something like a trail, doubtless used by trappers, led in that direction. From Fort Hall there was also a trail down Snake River, by which trapping parties reached the Columbia River and Fort Vancouver,[18] the headquarters of the Hudson's Bay Company.

---

[16] Here Bidwell's party left the Oregon Trail, whose further course is indicated in the sentences that follow.

Our party, originally sixty-nine, had become lessened to sixty-four in number. One had accidentally shot and killed himself at the forks of the Platte. Another of our party, named Simpson, had left us at Fort Laramie. Three had turned back from Green River, intending to make their way to Fort Bridger and await an opportunity to return home. Their names were Peyton, Rodgers, and Amos E. Frye. Thirty-two of our party, becoming discouraged, decided not to venture without path or guide into the unknown and trackless regions toward California, but concluded to go with the missionary party to Fort Hall and thence find their way down Snake and Columbia rivers into Oregon. The rest of us—also thirty-two in number, including Benjamin Kelsey, his wife and little daughter—remained firm, refusing to be diverted from our original purpose of going direct to California. After getting all the information we could from Captain Fitzpatrick, we regretfully bade good-bye to our fellow emigrants and to Father De Smet and his party.

---

[17] Old Fort Hall was established in 1834 by Nathaniel Wyeth and in 1836 was sold to the Hudson's Bay Company. It was a few miles above the mouth of Portneuf River, on the narrow plain between this stream and Lewis River, several miles northwest of modern Pocatello, Idaho. The later U. S. military post which went by the same name was established in 1870 some forty miles to the northeast of the fur trader's Fort Hall.

[18] Fort Vancouver was on the north bank of the Columbia River, six miles above the mouth of the Willamette, on the site of the present town of Vancouver. It was built by Dr. John McLoughlin, the famous Hudson's Bay Company factor, who had decided to transfer his headquarters from Astoria to this point. It continued to be occupied as a post of the Hudson's Bay Company until the American possession of Oregon. In 1849 General Harney established here a U. S. military post, later known as Vancouver Barracks.

We were now thrown entirely upon our own resources. All the country beyond was to us a veritable *terra incognita*, and we only knew that California lay to the west. Captain Fitzpatrick was not much better informed, but he had heard that parties had penetrated the country to the southwest and west of Salt Lake to trap for beaver; and by his advice four of our men went with the parties to Fort Hall to consult Captain Grant,[19] who was in charge there, and gain information. Meanwhile our depleted party slowly made its way down the west side of Bear River.

Our separation at Soda Springs recalls an incident. The days were usually very hot, the nights almost freezing. The first day out our little company went only about ten miles and camped on Bear River. In company with a man named James Johns—always called "Jimmy Johns"—I wandered a mile or two down the river fishing. Seeing snow on a high mountain to the west we longed to reach it, for the heat where we were was intense. So, without losing time to get our guns or coats or give notice at the camp, we started direct for the snow, with the impression that we could go and return by sundown. But there intervened a range of low mountains, a certain peak of which seemed almost to touch the snow. Both of us were fleet of foot and made haste, but we only gained the summit of the peak before sundown. The distance must have been twelve or fifteen miles. A valley intervened and the snow lay on a higher mountain beyond. I proposed to camp, but Jimmy gave me a disdainful look, as much as to say, "You are afraid to go," and quickened his gait into a run down the mountain toward the snow. I called to him to stop, but he would not even look back. A firm resolve seized me—to overtake him, but not again to ask him to return. We crossed the valley in the night, saw many camp fires, and gained a sharp ridge leading up to the snow. This was first brushy and then rocky. The brush had no paths except those made by wild animals. The rocks were sharp and cut through our moccasins and made our feet bleed. But up and up we went until long after midnight, and until a cloud covered the mountain. We were above the timber line, except a few stunted fir trees, under which we crawled to await for day, for it was too dark to see. Day soon dawned, but we were almost frozen. Our fir tree nest had been the lair of grizzly bears that had wallowed there and shed quantities of shaggy hair. The snow was still beyond, and we had lost both sight and direction. But in an hour or two we reached it. It was nearly as hard as ice.

---

[19] Captain James Grant had charge of Fort Hall, as factor for the Hudson's Bay Company, for several years. He befriended many travelers who came this way, and is frequently mentioned in their journals.

Filling a handkerchief, without taking time to admire the scenery, we started toward the camp by a new route, for our feet were too sore to go by the way of the rocky ridge by which we had come. But the new way led into trouble. There were thickets so dense as to exclude the sun, and roaring little streams in deep, dark chasms. We had to crawl through paths which looked untrodden except by grizzlies. In one place a large bear had passed evidently only a few minutes before, crossing the deep gorge, plunging through the wild, dashing water, and wetting the steep bank as he went up. We carried our drawn butcher knives in our hands, for they were our only weapons. At last we emerged into the valley. Apparently numerous Indians had left that very morning, as shown by the tracks of lodge poles drawn on the ground. Making haste, we soon gained the hills, and at about 2 P. M. sighted our wagons, already two or three miles on the march. When our friends saw us they stopped, and all who could ran to welcome us. They had given us up for lost, supposing that we had been killed by the hostile Blackfeet, who, as Captain Fitzpatrick had warned us, sometimes roamed through that region. The company had barricaded the camp at night as best they could, and every man had spent a sleepless night on guard. Next morning they had spent several hours in scouring the country. Their first questions were: "Where have you been? "Where have you been?" I was able to answer triumphantly: "We have been up to the snow!" and to demonstrate the fact by showing all the snow I had left, which was now reduced to a ball about the size of my fist.

In about ten days our four men returned from Fort Hall, during which time we had advanced something over one hundred miles toward Salt Lake. They brought the information that we must strike out west of Salt Lake—as it was even then called by the trappers—being careful not to go too far south, lest we should get into a wasteless country without grass. They also said we must be careful not to go too far north, lest we should get into a broken country and steep cañons, and wander about, as trapping parties had been known to do, and become bewildered and perish.

September had come before we reached Salt Lake, which we struck at its northern extremity. Part of the time we had purposely traveled slowly to enable the men from Fort Hall the sooner to overtake us. But unavoidable delays were frequent; daily, often hourly. Indian fires obscured mountains and valleys in a dense, smoky atmosphere, so that we could not see any considerable distance in order to avoid obstacles.

The principal growth, on plain and hill alike, was the interminable sagebrush, and often it was difficult, for miles at a time, to break a road through it, and sometimes a lightly laden wagon would be overturned. Its monotonous dull color and scraggy appearance gave a most dreary aspect to the landscape. But it was not wholly useless. Where large enough it made excellent fuel, and it was the home and shelter of the hare—generally known as the jackrabbit—and of the sage hen. Trees were almost a sure sign of water in that region. But the mirage was most deceptive, magnifying stunted sagebrush or diminutive hillocks into trees and groves. Thus misled, we traveled all day without water, and at midnight found ourselves in a plain as level as a floor, incrusted with salt and as white as snow. Crusts of salt broken up by our wagons and driven by the chilly night wind like ice on the surface of the water of a frozen pond was to me a striking counterfeit of a winter scene.

This plain became softer and softer until our poor, almost famished animals could not pull our wagons. In fact, we were going direct to Salt Lake and did not know it. So, in search of water, we turned from a southerly to an easterly course, and went about ten miles, and soon after daylight arrived at

Bear River. So near Salt Lake were we that the water in the river was too salty for us or our animals to use, but we had to use it. It would not quench thirst, but it did save life. The grass looked most luxuriant, and sparkled as if covered with frost, but it was salt. Our hungry, jaded animals refused to eat it, and we had to lie by a whole day to rest them before we could travel.

Leaving this camp and bearing northwest we crossed our tracks on the salt plain, having thus described a triangle of several miles in dimensions. One of the most serious of our troubles was to find water where we could camp at night. So soon came another hot day and all night without water. From a westerly course we turned directly north, and guided by antelope trails, came in a few miles to an abundance of grass and good water. The condition of our animals compelled us to rest here nearly a week. Meanwhile two of our men who had been to Fort Hall went ahead to explore. Provisions were becoming scarce, and we saw we must avoid unnecessary delay. The two men were gone about five days. Under their lead we set forth, bearing west, then southwest, around Salt Lake, then again west. After two or three fatiguing days—one day and night without water—the first notice we had of approach to any considerable mountain was the sight of crags dimly seen through the smoke, many hundred feet above our heads. Here was plenty of good grass and water. Nearly all now said: "Let us leave our wagons, otherwise the snows will overtake us before we get to California." So we stopped one day and threw away everything we could not carry, made pack saddles, and packed the oxen, mules, and horses, and started.

On Green River we had seen the style of pack saddle used by the trapping party, and had learned a little about making them. Packing is an art, and only an experienced mountaineer can do it well, so as to save his animal and keep his pack from falling off. We were unaccustomed to it, and the difficulties we had at first were simply indescribable. It is much more difficult to fasten a pack on an ox than on a mule or a horse. The trouble began the very first day. But we started—most of us on foot, for nearly all the animals, including several of the oxen, had to carry packs. It was but a few minutes before the packs began to turn; horses became scared, mules kicked, oxen jumped and bellowed, and articles were scattered in all directions. We took more pains, fixed things, made a new start, and did better, though packs continued occasionally to fall off and delay us.

Those who had better pack saddles and had tied their loads securely were ahead, while the others were obliged to lag behind because they had to repack, and sometimes things would be strewn all along the route. The first night I happened to be among those that kept pretty well back, because the horses out-traveled the oxen. The foremost came to a place and stopped where there was no water or grass, and built a fire so that we could see it and come up to them. We got there about midnight, but some of our oxen that had packs on had not come up, and among them were my two. So I had to return the next morning and find them, Cheyenne Dawson alone volunteering to go with me. One man had brought along about a quart of water, which was carefully doled out before we started, each receiving a little canister cover full—less than half a gill; but as Dawson and I had to go for the oxen we were given a double portion. This was all the water I had until the next day. It was a burning hot day. We could not find the trail of the oxen for a long time, and Dawson refused to go any farther, saying that there were plenty of cattle in California; but I had to do it for the oxen were carrying our provisions and other things. Afterwards I struck the trail and found that the oxen instead of going west had gone north, and I followed them until nearly sundown. They had gone into a grassy country, which showed that they were nearing water. Seeing Indian tracks on their trail following them, I felt there was imminent danger, and at once examined my gun and pistols to see that they were primed and ready. But I soon found my oxen lying down in tall grass by the side of the trail.

Seeing no Indians, I hastened to fasten the packs and make my way to overtake the company. They had promised to stop when they came to water and wait for me. I traveled all night, and at early dawn came to where there was plenty of water and where the company had taken their dinner the day before, but they had failed to stop for me according to promise. I was much perplexed, because I had seen many fires during the night which I took to be Indian fires, so I fastened my oxen to a scraggy willow and began to make circles around to see which way the company had gone. The ground was so hard that the animals had made no impression, which bewildered me. Finally, while making a circle of about three miles off to the south, I saw two men coming on horseback. In the glare of the mirage, which distorted everything, I could not tell whether they were Indians or white men, but I could only tell by the motion that they were mounted. I made a bee-line to my oxen, so as to make breast-works of them. In doing this I came to a small stream, resembling running water, into which I urged my horse, whereupon he went down into a quagmire, over head and ears, out of sight. My gun also went under the mire. I got hold of something on the bank, threw out my gun, which was full of mud and water, and holding to the rope attached to my horse, by dint of hard pulling I succeeded in getting him out—a very sorry sight, his ears and eyes full of mud, his body covered with it. At last, just in time, I was able to move and get behind the oxen. My gun was in no condition to shoot. However, putting dry powder in the pan I determined to do my best in case the supposed Indians should come up; but lo! they were two of our party, coming to meet me, bringing water and provisions. It was a great relief. I felt indignant that the party had not stopped for me—not the less so when I learned that Captain Bartleson had said, when they started back to find me, that they "would be in better business to go ahead and look for a road." He had not forgotten certain comments of mine on his qualities as a student of Indian character. An instance of this I will relate.

One morning just as we were packing up, a party of about ninety Indians on horseback, a regular war party, were descried coming up. Some of us begged the captain to send men out to prevent them coming to us while we were in the confusion of packing. But he said, "Boys, you must not show any sign of hostility. If you go out there with guns the Indians will think us hostile, and may get mad and hurt us." However, five or six of us took our guns and went out, and by signs made them halt. They did not prove to be hostile, but they had carbines, and if we had been careless and had let them come near they might, and probably would, have killed us. At last we got packed up and started, and the Indians traveled along three or four hundred yards one side or the other of us or behind us all day. They appeared anxious to trade and offered a buckskin, well dressed, worth two or three dollars, for three or four charges of powder and three or four balls. This showed that they were in want of ammunition. The carbines indicated that they had had communication with some trading post belonging to the Hudson's Bay Company. They had buffalo robes also, which showed that they were a roving hunting party, as there were no buffaloes within three or four hundred miles. At this time I had spoken my mind pretty freely concerning Captain Bartleson's lack of judgment, as one could scarcely help doing under the circumstances.

We now got into a country where there was no grass nor water, and then we began to catechize the men who had gone to Fort Hall. They repeated, "If you go too far south you will get into a desert country and your animals will perish; there will be no water nor grass." We were evidently too far south. We could not go west, and the formation of the country was such that we had to turn and go north across a range of mountains. Having struck a small stream we camped upon it all night, and next day continued down its banks, crossing from side to side, most of the time following Indian paths or paths made by antelopes and deer. In the afternoon we entered a cañon, the walls of which were precipitous and several hundred feet high. Finally the pleasant bermy banks gave out entirely, and we could travel only in the dry bed of what in the wet season was a raging river. It became a solid mass of stones and huge boulders, and the animals became tenderfooted and sore so that they could hardly stand up, and as we continued the way became worse and worse. There was no place for us to lie down and sleep, nor could our animals lie down; the water had given out, and the prospect was indeed gloomy—the cañon had been leading us directly north.

All agreed that the animals were too jaded and worn to go back. Then we called the men: "What did they tell you at Fort Hall about the northern region?" They repeated, "You must not go too far north; if you do you will get into difficult cañons that lead toward the Columbia River, where you may become bewildered and wander about and perish." This cañon was going nearly north; in fact it seemed a little east of north. We sent some men to see if they could reach the top of the mountain by scaling the precipice somewhere and get a view, and they came back about ten or eleven o'clock saying the country looked better three or four miles farther ahead. So we were encouraged; even the animals seemed to take courage, and we got along much better than had been thought possible, and by one o'clock that day came out on what is now known as the Humboldt River. It was not until four years later (1845) that General Frémont first saw this river and named it Humboldt.

Our course was first westward and then southward, following this river for many days, till we came to its Sink, near which we saw a solitary horse, an indication that trappers had sometime been in that vicinity. We tried to catch him but failed; he had been there long enough to become very wild. We saw many Indians on the Humboldt, especially toward the Sink. There were many tule marshes. The tule is a rush, large, but here not very tall. It was generally completely covered with honeydew, but this in turn was wholly covered with a pediculous-looking insect which fed upon it. The Indians gathered quantities of the honey and pressed it into balls about the size of one's fist, having the appearance of wet bran. At first we greatly relished this Indian food, but when we saw what it was made of—that the insects pressed into the mass were the main ingredient—we lost our appetites and bought no more of it.

From the time we left our wagons many had to walk, and more and more as we advanced. Going down the Humboldt, at least half were on foot. Provisions had given out, except a little coarse green grass among the willows. Along the river the country was dry, bare, and desolate; we saw no game except antelopes, and they were scarce and hard to kill; and walking was very fatiguing. We had several tobacco users in our company and the supply was running short. Tobacco lovers would surrender their animals for anyone to ride who would furnish them with an ounce or two to chew during the day. One day one of these devotees lost his tobacco and went back for it, but failed to find it. An Indian in a friendly manner overtook us, bringing the piece of tobacco, which he had found on our trail or at our latest camp, and surrendered it. The owner instead of being thankful accused the Indian of having stolen it—an impossibility, as we had seen no Indians or Indian signs for some days. Perhaps the Indian did not know what it was, else he might have kept it for smoking. But I think otherwise, for, patting his breast, he said "Shoshone, Shoshone," which was the Indian way of showing he was friendly. The Shoshone were known as always friendly to the whites, and it is not difficult to see how other and distant tribes might claim to be Shoshone as a passport to favor.

On the Humboldt we had a further division of our ranks. In going down the river we went sometimes on one side and sometimes on the other, but mostly on the north side, till we were nearing what are now known as the Humboldt Mountains. We were getting tired, and some were in favor of leaving the oxen, of which we then had only about seven or eight, and rushing on into California.

They said there was plenty of beef in California. But some of us said: "No, our oxen are now our only supply of food. We are doing well, making eighteen or twenty miles a day." One morning when it was my turn at driving the oxen, the captain traveled so fast that I could not keep up, and was left far behind. When night came I had to leave the trail and go over a rocky declivity for a mile and a half into a gloomy, damp bottom, and unpack the oxen and turn them out to eat, sleeping myself without blankets. I got up the next morning, hunted the oxen out of the willow thicket, and repacked them. Not having had supper or breakfast, and having to travel nine miles before I overtook the party, perhaps I was not in the best humor.

They were waiting, and for the very good reason that they could have nothing to eat till I came up with the oxen and one could be killed. I felt badly treated, and let the captain know it plainly; but, much to my surprise, he made no reply, and none of his men said a word. We killed an ox, ate our breakfast, and got ready to start about one or two o'clock in the afternoon. When nearly ready to go, the captain and one or two of his mess came to us and said: "Boys, our animals are much better than yours, and we always get out of meat before any of the rest of you.

Let us have the most of the meat this time, and we will pay you back the next ox we kill." We gladly let them have all they wished. But as soon as they had taken it and were mounted ready to start the captain in a loud voice exclaimed: "Now we have been found fault with long enough, and we are going to California. If you can keep up with us, all right; if you cannot, you may go to ——"; and away they started, the captain and eight men. One of the men would not go with the captain; he said: "The captain is wrong, and I will stay with you boys."

In a short time they were out of sight. We followed their trail for two or three days, but after they had crossed over to the south side of the Humboldt and turned south we came into a sandy waste where the wind had entirely obliterated their tracks. We were then thrown entirely upon our own resources. It was our desire to make as great speed as possible westward, deviating only when obstacles interposed, and in such a case bearing south instead of north, so as to be found in a lower latitude in the event that winter should overtake us in the mountains. But, diverting by following our fugitive captain and party across the Humboldt, we thereby missed the luxuriant Truckee meadows lying but a short distance to the west, a resting place well and favorably known to later emigrants. So, perforce, we followed down to the Sink of the Humboldt and were obliged to drink its water, which in the fall of the year becomes stagnant and the color of lye, and not fit to drink or use unless boiled. Here we camped. Leaving the Sink of the Humboldt, we crossed a considerable stream which must have been Carson River, and came to another stream which must have been the Walker River, and followed it up to where it came out of the mountains, which proved to be the Sierra Nevadas. We did not know the name of the mountains. Neither had these rivers then been named, nor had they been seen by Kit Carson or Joe Walker, for whom they were named, nor were they seen until 1845 by Frémont, who named them.

We were now camped on Walker River, at the very eastern base of the Sierra Nevadas, and had only two oxen left. We sent men ahead to see if it would be possible to scale the mountains, while we killed the better of the two oxen and dried the meat in preparation for the ascent. The men returned toward evening and reported that they thought it would be possible to ascend the mountains, though very difficult. We had eaten our supper and were ready for the climb in the morning. Looking back on the plains we saw something coming, which we decided to be Indians. They traveled very slowly, and it was difficult to understand their movements. To make a long story short, it was the eight men that had left us nine days before. They had gone farther south than we, and had come to a lake, probably Carson Lake, and there had found Indians, who supplied them plentifully with fish and pine nuts. Fish caught in such water are not fit to eat at any time, much less in the fall of the year. The men had eaten heartily of fish and pine nuts and had got something akin to cholera morbus. We ran out to meet them and shook hands, and put our frying pans on and gave them the best supper we could. Captain Bartleson, who when we started from Missouri was a portly man, was reduced to half his former girth. He said: "Boys, if ever I get back to Missouri I will never leave that country. I would gladly eat out of the troughs with my hogs." He seemed to be heartily sick of his late experience, but that did not prevent him from leaving us twice after that.

We were now in what is at present Nevada, and probably within forty miles of the present boundary of California. We ascended the mountain on the north side of Walker River to the summit, and then struck a stream running west which proved to be the extreme source of the Stanislaus River. We followed it down for several days and finally came to where a branch ran into it, each forming a cañon. The main river flowed in a precipitous gorge, in places apparently a mile deep, and the gorge that came into it was but little less formidable. At night we found ourselves on the extreme point of the promontory between the two, very tired, and with neither grass nor water. We had to stay there that night. Early the next morning two men went down to see if it would be possible to get down through the smaller cañon. I was one of them, Jimmy Johns was the other. Benjamin Kelsey, who had shown himself expert in finding the way, was now, without any election, still recognized as leader, as he had been during the absence of Bartleson. A party also went back to see how far we should have to go around before we could pass over the tributary cañon. The understanding was that when we went down the cañon if it was practicable to get through we were to fire a gun so that all could follow; but if not, we were not to fire, even if we saw game. When Jimmy and I got down about three-quarters of a mile I came to the conclusion that it was impossible to get through and said to him, "Jimmy, we might as well go back; we can't go here." "Yes, we can," said he, and insisting that we could, he pulled out a pistol and fired.

It was an old dragoon pistol, and reverberated like a cannon. I hurried back to tell the company not to come down, but before I reached them the captain and his party had started. I explained, and warned them that they could not get down; but they went on as far as they could go and then were obliged to stay all day and all night to rest the animals, and had to go among the rocks and pick a little grass for them, and go down to the stream through a terrible place in the cañon to bring water up in cups and camp kettles, and some of the men in their boots, to pour down the animals' throats in order to keep them from perishing. Finally, four of them pulling and four pushing a mule, they managed to get them up one by one, and then carried all the things up again on their backs—not an easy job for exhausted men.

In some way, nobody knows how, Jimmy got through that cañon and into the Sacramento Valley. He had a horse with him—an Indian horse that was bought in the Rocky Mountains, and which could come as near climbing a tree as any horse I ever knew. Jimmy was a character. Of all men I have ever known I think he was the most fearless;

he had the bravery of a bulldog. He was not seen for two months—until he was found at Sutter's, afterwards known as Sutter's Fort, now Sacramento City.

We went on, traveling as near west as we could. When we killed our last ox we shot and ate crows or anything we could kill, and one man shot a wildcat. We could eat anything. One day in the morning I went ahead, on foot of course, to see if I could kill something, it being understood that the company would keep on as near west as possible and find a practicable road. I followed an Indian trail down into the cañon, meeting many Indians on the way up. They did not molest me; but I did not quite like their looks. I went about ten miles down the cañon, and then began to think it time to strike north to intersect the trail of the company going west. A most difficult time I had scaling the precipice. Once I threw my gun ahead of me, being unable to hold it and climb, and then was in despair lest I could not get up where it was, but finally I did barely manage to do so, and make my way north. As the darkness came on I was obliged to look down and feel with my feet, lest I should pass over the trail of the party without seeing it. Just at dark I came to an immense fallen tree and tried to go around the top, but the place was too brushy, so I went around the butt, which seemed to me to be about twenty or twenty-five feet above my head. This I suppose to have been one of the fallen trees in the Calaveras Grove of *sequoia gigantea* or mammoth trees, as I have since been there, and to my own satisfaction identified the lay of the land and the tree. Hence I concluded that I must have been the first white man who ever saw *sequoia gigantea*, of which I told Frémont when he came to California in 1845. Of course sleep was impossible, for I had neither blanket nor coat, and burned or froze alternately as I turned from one side to the other before the small fire which I had built, until morning, when I started eastward to intersect the trail, thinking the company had turned north. But I traveled until noon and found no trail; then striking south, I came to the camp which I had left the previous morning.

The party had gone, but not where they said they would go; for they had taken the same trail I followed into the cañon, and had gone up the south side, which they had found so steep that many of the poor animals could not climb it and had to be left. When I arrived, the Indians were there cutting the horses to pieces and carrying off the meat. My situation, alone among strange Indians killing our poor horses, was by no means comfortable. Afterwards we found that these Indians were always at war with the Californians. They were known as the Horse Thief Indians, and lived chiefly on horse flesh; they had been in the habit of raiding the ranches even to the very coast, driving away horses by the hundreds into the mountains to eat. That night I overtook the party in camp.

A day or two later we came to a place where there was a great quantity of horse bones, and we did not know what it meant; we thought that an army must have perished there. They were, of course, horses that the Indians had driven in and slaughtered. A few nights later, fearing depredations, we concluded to stand guard—all but one man, who would not. So we let his two horses roam where they pleased. In the morning they could not be found. A few miles away we came to a village; the Indians had fled, but we found the horses killed and some of the meat roasting on a fire.

We were now on the edge of the San Joaquin Valley, but we did not even know that we were in California. We could see a range of mountains lying to the west—the Coast Range—but we could see no valley. The evening of the day we started down into the valley we were very tired, and when night came our party was strung along for three or four miles, and every man slept where darkness overtook him. He would take off his saddle for a pillow and turn his horse or mule loose, if he had one. His animal would be too poor to walk away, and in the morning he would find him, usually within fifty feet. The jaded horses nearly perished with hunger and fatigue. When we overtook the foremost of the party the next morning we found they had come to a pond of water, and one of them had killed a fat coyote. When I came up it was all eaten except the lights and the windpipe, on which I made my breakfast.

From that camp we saw timber to the north of us, evidently bordering a stream running west. It turned out to be the stream that we had followed down in the mountains —the Stanislaus River. As soon as we came in sight of the bottom land of the stream we saw an abundance of antelopes and sandhill cranes. We killed two of each the first evening. Wild grapes also abounded. The next day we killed fifteen deer and antelopes, jerked the meat, and got ready to go on, all except the captain's mess of seven or eight, who decided to stay there and lay in meat enough to last them into California. We were really almost down to tidewater, and did not know it. Some thought it was five hundred miles yet to California. But all thought we had to cross at least that range of mountains in sight to the west before entering the promised land, and how many beyond no man could tell. Nearly all thought it best to press on lest snows might overtake us in the mountains before us, as they had already nearly done on the mountains behind us (the Sierra Nevadas). It was now about the first of November. Our party set forth bearing northwest, aiming for a seeming gap north of a high mountain in the chain to the west of us. That mountain we found to be Mount Diablo. At night the Indians attacked the captain's camp and stole all their animals, which were the best in the company, and the next day the men had to overtake us with just what they could carry in their hands.

The next day, judging from the timber we saw, we concluded there was a river to the west. So two men went ahead to see if they could find a trail or a crossing. The timber proved to be along what is now known as the San Joaquin River. We sent two men on ahead to spy out the country. At night one of them returned, saying they came across an Indian on horseback without a saddle, who wore a cloth jacket but no other clothing. From what they could understand the Indian knew Mr. Marsh and had offered to guide them to his place. He plainly said "Marsh," and of course we supposed it was the Dr. Marsh before referred to who had written the letter to a friend in Jackson County, Missouri, and so it proved. One man went with the Indian to Marsh's ranch and the other came back to tell us what he had done, with the suggestion that we should go and cross the river (San Joaquin) at the place to which the trail was leading. In that way we found ourselves two days later at Dr. Marsh's ranch, and there we learned that we were really in California and our journey at an end. After six months we had now arrived at the first settlement in California, November 4, 1841.

Chapter 3

CALIFORNIA IN THE FORTIES

THE party whose fortunes I have followed across the plains was not only the first that went direct to California from the east; we were probably the first white people, except Bonneville's party of 1833, that ever crossed the Sierra Nevadas.[20] Dr. Marsh's ranch, the first settlement reached by us in California, was located in the eastern foothills of the Coast Range Mountains, near the northwestern extremity of the great San Joaquin Valley and about six miles east of Monte Diablo, which may be called about the geographical center of Contra Costa County. There were no other settlements in the valley; it was, apparently, still just as new as when Columbus discovered America, and roaming over it were countless thousands of wild horses, of elk, and of antelopes. It had been one of the driest years ever known in California. The country was brown and parched, and wheat, beans, and everything had failed. Cattle were almost starving for grass, and the people, except perhaps a few of the best families, were without bread, and were eating chiefly meat, and that often of very poor quality.

---

[20] Benjamin E. L. Bonneville was a native of France, born about the year 1795, who came to America and graduating from West Point in 1815 spent his life as an officer in the U. S. army. He became a captain of infantry in 1825 and from 1831 to 1836 was engaged in various explorations in the Rocky Mountains and California. His journal, amplified and edited by Washington Irving, was published by the latter in 1837 with the title, *Adventures of Captain Bonneville, U.S.A., in the Rocky Mountains and the Far West.* On Sept. 9, 1861, Bonneville (now a colonel) was retired from active service for disability, and from 1862 to 1865 he commanded Benton Barracks, at St. Louis. He died June 12, 1878, being at the time the oldest officer on the retired list of the U. S. army.

Dr. Marsh had come into California four or five years before by way of New Mexico. He was in some respects a remarkable man. In command of the English language I have scarcely ever seen his equal. He had never studied medicine, I believe, but was a great reader; sometimes he would lie in bed all day reading, and he had a memory that stereotyped all he read, and in those days in California such a man could easily assume the rôle of doctor and practice medicine. In fact, with the exception of Dr. Marsh there was then no physician of any kind anywhere in California. We were overjoyed to find an

American, and yet when we became acquainted with him we found him one of the most selfish of mortals. The night of our arrival he killed two pigs for us. Men reduced to living on poor meat and almost starving have an intense longing for anything fat. We felt very grateful, for we had by no means recovered from starving on poor mule meat, and when he set his Indian cook to making tortillas (little cakes) for us, giving one to each—there were thirty-two in our party—we felt even more grateful, and especially when we learned that he had had to use some of his seed wheat, for he had no other. Hearing that there was no such thing as money in the country, and that butcher-knives, guns, ammunition, and everything of that kind were better than money, we expressed our gratitude the first night to the doctor by presents, one giving a can of powder, another a bar of lead or a butcher-knife, and another a cheap but serviceable set of surgical instruments.

The next morning I rose early, among the first, in order to learn from our host something about California—what we could do, and where we could go—and, strange as it may seem he would scarcely answer a question. He seemed to be in an ill humor, and among other things he said: "The company has already been over a hundred dollars' expense to me, and God knows whether I will ever get a *reál*[21] of it or not." I was at a loss to account for this, and went out and told some of the party, and found that others had been snubbed in a similar manner. We held a consultation and resolved to leave as soon as convenient. Half our party concluded to go back to the San Joaquin River, where there was much game, and spend the winter hunting, chiefly for otter, the skins being worth three dollars apiece. The rest—about fourteen—succeeded in gaining information from Dr. Marsh by which they started to find the town of San José, about forty miles to the south, then known by the name of Pueblo de San José; now the city of San José. More or less of our effects had to be left at Marsh's, and I decided to remain and look out for them, and meantime to make short excursions about the country on my own account.

After the others had left I started off, traveling south, and came to what is now called Livermore Valley, then known as Livermore's ranch, belonging to Robert Livermore, a native of England. He had left a vessel when a mere boy, and had married and lived like the native Californians, and, like them, was very expert with the lasso. Livermore's was the frontier ranch, and more exposed than any other to the ravages of the Horse-thief Indians of the Sierra Nevadas, before mentioned. That valley was full of wild cattle, thousands of them, and they were more dangerous to one on foot, as I was, than grizzly bears. By dodging into the gulches and behind trees I made my way to a Mexican ranch at the extreme west end of the valley, where I stayed all night. This was one of the noted ranches, and belonged to a Californian called Don José Maria Amador, more recently to a man named Dougherty. The rancheros marked and branded their stock differently so as to distinguish them. But it was not possible to keep them separate. One would often steal cattle from the other. Livermore in this way lost cattle by his neighbor Amador. In fact, it was almost a daily occurrence, a race to see which could get and kill the most of the other's cattle. Cattle in those days were often killed for the hides alone. One day a man saw Amador kill a fine steer belonging to Livermore. When he reached Livermore's, ten or fifteen miles away, and told him what Amador had done, he found Livermore skinning a steer of Amador's!

---

[21] The *reál* was a small Spanish silver coin.

Next day, seeing nothing to encourage me, I started to return to Marsh's ranch. On the way, as I came to where two roads, or rather paths, converged, I fell in with one of the fourteen men, M. C. Nye, who had started for San José. He seemed very much agitated, and reported that at the mission of San José, some fifteen miles this side of the town of San José, all the men had been arrested and put in prison by General Vallejo, Mexican commander-in-chief of the military under Governor Alvarado, he alone having been sent back to tell Marsh and to have him come forthwith to explain why this armed force had invaded the country. We reached Marsh's after dark. The next day the Doctor started down to the mission of San José, nearly thirty miles distant, with a list of the company, which I gave him. He was gone about three days. Meanwhile we sent word to the men on the San Joaquin River to let them know what had taken place, and they at once returned to the ranch to await results.

When Marsh came back, he said ominously: "Now, men, I want you all to come into the house and I will tell you your fate." We all went in, and he announced, "You men that have five dollars can have passports and remain in the country and go where you please." The fact was, he had simply obtained passports for the asking; they had cost him nothing. The men who had been arrested at the mission had been liberated as soon as their passports were issued to them, and they had at once proceeded on their way to San José. But five dollars! I don't suppose anyone had five dollars; nine-tenths of them probably had not a cent of money. The names were called and each man settled, giving the amount in something, and if unable to make it up in money or effects he would give his note for the rest. All the names were called except my own. There was no passport for me. Marsh had certainly not forgotten me, for I had furnished him with the list of our names myself. Possibly his idea was—as others surmised and afterwards told me—that lacking a passport, I would stay at his ranch and make a useful hand to work.

The next morning before day found me starting for the mission of San José to get a passport for myself. Mike Nye, the man who had brought the news of the arrest, went with me. A friend had lent me a poor old horse, fit only to carry my blankets. I arrived in a heavy rain-storm, and was marched into the calaboose and kept there three days with nothing to eat, and the fleas were so numerous as to cover and darken anything of a light color. There were four or five Indians in the prison. They were ironed, and they kept tolling a bell, as a punishment, I suppose, for they were said to have stolen horses; possibly they belonged to the Horse-thief tribes east of the San Joaquin Valley. Sentries were stationed at the door. Through a grated window I made a motion to an Indian boy outside and he brought me a handful of beans and a handful of *manteca*, which is used by Mexicans instead of lard. It seemed as if they were going to starve me to death. After having been there three days, I saw through the door a man whom, from his light hair, I took to be an American although he was clad in the wild picturesque garb of a native Californian, including serape and the huge spurs used by the vaquero. I had the sentry at the door hail him. He proved to be an American, a resident of the pueblo of San José, named Thomas Bowen, and he kindly went to Vallejo, who was right across the way in the big mission building, and procured for me the passport. I think I have that passport now, signed by Vallejo and written in Spanish by Victor Pruden. Everyone at the mission pronounced Marsh's action an outrage; such a thing was never known before.

We had already heard that a man by the name of Sutter was starting a colony a hundred miles away to the north in the Sacramento Valley. No other civilized settlement had been attempted anywhere east of the Coast Range; before Sutter came the Indians had reigned supreme. As the best thing to be done I now determined to go to Sutter's, afterwards called Sutter's Fort, or New Helvetia.

Dr. Marsh said that we could make the journey in two days, but it took us eight. Winter had come in earnest, and winter in California then, as now, meant rain. I had three companions. It was wet when we started, and much of the time we traveled through a pouring rain. Streams were out of their banks; gulches were swimming; plains were inundated; indeed, most of the country was overflowed. There were no roads, merely paths, trodden only by Indians and wild game. We were compelled to follow the paths, even when they were under water, for the moment our animals stepped to one side, down they went into the mire. Most of the way was through the region now lying between Lathrop and Sacramento. We got out of provisions and were about three days without food. Game was plentiful, but hard to shoot in the rain. Besides, it was impossible to keep our old flintlock guns dry, and especially the powder dry in the pans.

On the eighth day we came to Sutter's settlement. This was November 28, 1841;

the fort had not then been begun. Sutter received us with open arms and in a princely fashion, for he was a man of the most polite address and the most courteous manners, a man who could shine in any society.[22] Moreover, our coming was not unexpected to him. It will be remembered that in the Sierra Nevadas one of our men named Jimmy Johns became separated from the main party. It seems that he came on into California, and, diverging into the north, found his way down to Sutter's settlement, perhaps a little before we reached Dr. Marsh's. Through this man Sutter heard that our company of thirty men were already somewhere in California. He immediately loaded two mules with provisions taken out of his private stores, and sent two men with them in search of us. But they did not find us, and returned with the provisions to Sutter's. Later, after a long search, the same two men, having been sent out again by Sutter, struck our trail and followed it to Marsh's.

John A. Sutter was born in Baden in 1803 of Swiss parents, and was proud of his connection with the only republic of any consequence in Europe. He was a warm admirer of the United States, and some of his friends had persuaded him to cross the Atlantic. He first went to a friend in Indiana with whom he stayed awhile, helping to clear land, but it was a business that he was not accustomed to. So he made his way to St. Louis and invested what means he had in merchandise, and went out as a New Mexican trader to Santa Fé. Having been unsuccessful at Santa Fé, he returned to St. Louis, joined a party of trappers, went to the Rocky Mountains, and found his way down the Columbia River to Fort Vancouver. There he formed plans for trying to get down to the coast of California to establish a colony. He took a vessel that went to the Sandwich Islands, and there communicated his plans to people who assisted him. But as there was no vessel going direct from the Sandwich Islands to California, he had to take a Russian vessel by way of Sitka. He got such credit and help as he could in the Sandwich Islands and induced five or six natives to accompany him to start the contemplated colony. He expected to send to Europe and to the United States for his colonists. When he came to the coast of California in 1840, he had an interview with the governor, Alvarado, and obtained permission to explore the country and find a place for his colony. He came to the bay of

---

[22] He had been educated in a military school and had served as an officer in the French army before coming to America.

San Francisco, procured a boat, explored the largest river he could find, and selected the present site of Sacramento.

A short time before we arrived, Sutter had bought out the Russian-American Fur Company at Fort Ross and Bodega on the Pacific. That company had a charter from Spain to take furs, but had no right to the land. The charter had almost expired. Against the protest of the California authorities they had extended their settlement southward some twenty miles farther than they had any right to, and had occupied the country to, and even beyond the bay of Bodega. The time came when the taking of furs was no longer profitable; the Russians were ordered to vacate and return to Sitka. They wished to sell out all their personal property and whatever remaining right they had to the land. So Sutter bought them out: cattle and horses, a little vessel of about twenty-five tons burden, called a launch, and other property, including forty-odd pieces of old rusty cannon and one or two small brass pieces, with a quantity of old French flintlock muskets, pronounced by Sutter to be of those lost by Bonaparte in 1812 in his disastrous retreat from Moscow.

This ordnance Sutter conveyed up the Sacramento River on the launch to his colony. As soon as the native Californians heard that he had bought out the Russians and was beginning to fortify himself by taking up the cannon, they began to fear him. They were doubtless jealous because Americans and other foreigners had already commenced to make the place their headquarters, and they foresaw that Sutter's Fort would be for them, especially for Americans, what it naturally did become in fact, a place of protection and general rendezvous, and so they threatened to break it up. Sutter had not yet actually received his grant; he had simply taken preliminary steps and had obtained permission to settle and proceed to colonize. These threats were made before he had begun the fort, much less built it, and Sutter felt insecure. He had a good many Indians whom he had collected about him, and a few white men (perhaps fifteen or twenty), and some Sandwich Islanders. When he heard of the coming of our thirty men he inferred at once that we would soon reach him and be an additional protection. With this feeling of security, even before the arrival of our party, Sutter was so indiscreet as to write a letter to the Governor or to someone in authority, saying that he wanted to hear no more threats of dispossession, for he was now able not only to defend himself, but to go and chastise them.

That letter having been dispatched to the city of Mexico, the authorities there sent a new governor in 1842 with about six hundred troops to subdue Sutter. But the new governor, Manuel Micheltorena, was an intelligent man. He knew the history of California and was aware that nearly all of his predecessors had been expelled by insurrections of the native Californians. Sutter sent a courier to meet the Governor before his arrival at Los Angeles, with a letter in French, conveying his greetings to the Governor, expressing a most cordial welcome, and submitting cheerfully and entirely to his authority. In this way, the Governor and Sutter became fast friends, and through Sutter the Americans had a friend in Governor Micheltorena.

The first employment I had in California was in Sutter's service, about two months after our arrival at Marsh's. He engaged me in January, 1842, to go to Bodega and Fort Ross and to stay there until he could finish removing the property which he had bought from the Russians.[32] At that time the Russians had an orchard of two or three acres of peaches and apples at Fort Ross. I dried the peaches and some of the apples and made cider of the remainder. A small vineyard of white grapes had also been planted. In February, 1842, I made a trip from Bodega northward as far as Clear Lake in the present Lake County. I remained at Bodega and Fort Ross fourteen months, until everything was removed; then I came into the Sacramento Valley and took charge for Sutter of his Hock farm (so named from a large Indian village on the place), remaining there a little more than a year—in 1843 and part of 1844.

---

[32] The Russians came to California as fur traders in 1812, and withdrew in 1842. Fort Ross and Bodega were on the coast of Sonoma County some distance north of San Francisco.

Nearly everybody who came to California made it a point to reach Sutter's Fort. Sutter was one of the most liberal and hospitable of men. Everybody was welcome—one man or a hundred, it was all the same. He had peculiar traits; his necessities compelled him to take all he could buy, and he paid all he could pay; but he failed to keep up with his payments. And so he soon found himself immensely, almost hopelessly involved in debt. His debt to the Russians amounted at first to something like $100,000. Interest increased apace. He had agreed to pay in wheat, but his crops failed. He struggled in every way, sowing large areas to wheat, increasing his cattle and horses, and trying to build a flouring mill. He kept his launch running to and from the bay, carrying down hides, tallow, furs, wheat, etc., returning with lumber sawed by hand in the redwood groves nearest the bay, and other supplies. On an average it took a month to make a trip. The fare for each person was $5, including board. Sutter started many other new enterprises in order to find relief from his embarrassments; but in spite of all he could do, these increased. Every year found him worse and worse off; but it was partly his own fault. He employed men, not because he always needed and could profitably employ them, but because in the kindness of his heart it simply became a habit to employ everybody who wanted employment. As long as he had anything he trusted anyone with everything he wanted, responsible or otherwise, acquaintances and strangers alike. Most of the labor was done by Indians, chiefly wild ones, except a few from the mission who spoke Spanish. The wild ones learned Spanish so far as they learned anything, that being the language of the country, and everybody had to learn something of it. The number of men employed by Sutter may be stated at from 100 to 500—the latter number at harvest time. Among them were blacksmiths, carpenters, tanners, gunsmiths, vaqueros, farmers, gardeners, weavers (to weave coarse woolen blankets), hunters, sawyers (to saw lumber by hand, a custom known in England), sheep-herders, trappers, and later, millwrights and a distiller. In a word, Sutter started every business and enterprise possible. He tried to maintain a sort of military discipline. Cannon were mounted, and pointed in every direction through embrasures in the walls and bastions. The soldiers were Indians, and every evening after coming from work they were drilled under a white officer, generally a German, marching to the music of a fife and drum. A sentry was always at the gate, and regular bells called men to and from work.

Harvesting, with rude implements, was a scene. Imagine three or four hundred wild Indians in a grain field, armed, some with sickles, some with butcher-knives, some with pieces of hoop iron roughly fashioned into shapes like sickles, but many having only their hands with which to gather up by small handfuls the dry and brittle grain; and as their hands would soon become sore, they resorted to dry willow sticks, which were split to afford a sharper edge with which to sever the straw. But the wildest part was the threshing. The harvest of weeks, sometimes of a month, was piled up in the straw in the form of a huge mound in the middle of a high, strong, round corral; then three or four hundred wild horses were turned in to thresh it, the Indians whooping to make them run faster. Suddenly they would dash in before the band at full speed, when the motion became reversed, with the effect of plowing up the trampled straw to the very bottom. In an hour the grain would be thoroughly threshed and the dry straw broken almost into chaff. In this manner I have seen 2,000 bushels of wheat threshed in a single hour. Next came the winnowing, which would often take another month. It could only be done when the wind was blowing, by throwing high into the air shovelfuls of grain, straw, and chaff, the lighter materials being wafted to one side, while the grain, comparatively clean, would descend and form a heap by itself. In this manner all the grain in California was cleaned. At that day no such thing as a fanning mill had ever been brought to this coast.

The kindness and hospitality of the native Californians have not been overstated. Up to the time the Mexican régime ceased in California they had a custom of never charging for anything; that is to say, for entertainment, food, use of horses, etc. You were supposed, even if invited to visit a friend, to bring your blankets with you, and one would be very thoughtless if he traveled and did not take a knife along with which to cut his meat. When you had eaten, the invariable custom was to rise, deliver to the woman or hostess the plate on which you had eaten the meat and beans—for that was about all they had—and say, *Muchas gracias, Senora* ("Many thanks, Madam"); and the hostess as invariably replied, *Buen provecho* ("May it do you much good"). The missions in California invariably had gardens with grapes, olives, figs, pomegranates, pears, and apples, but the ranches scarcely ever had any fruit, with the exception of the tuna or prickly pear. These were the only cultivated fruits I can call to mind in California, except oranges, lemons, and limes in a few places. When you wanted a horse to ride, you would take it to the next ranch—it might be twenty, thirty, or fifty miles—and turn it out there, and sometime or other in reclaiming his stock the owner would get it back. In this way you might travel from one end of California to the other.

The ranch life was not confined to the country; it prevailed in the towns, too. There was not a hotel in San Francisco or Monterey or anywhere in California until 1846, when the Americans took the country. The priests at the missions were glad to entertain strangers without charge. They would give you a room in which to sleep, and perhaps a bedstead with a hide stretched across it, and over that you would spread your blankets. At this time there was not in California any vehicle except a rude California cart. The wheels were without tires, and were made by felling an oak tree and hewing it down until it made a solid wheel nearly a foot thick on the rim and a little larger where the axle went through. The hole for the axle would be eight or nine inches in diameter, but a few years' use would increase it to a foot. To make the hole, an auger, gouge, or chisel was sometimes used, but the principal tool was an ax. A small tree required but little hewing and shaping to answer for an axle.

These carts were always drawn by oxen, the yoke being lashed with rawhide to the horns. To lubricate the axles they used soap (that is one thing the Mexicans could make), carrying along for the purpose a big pail of thick soapsuds which was constantly put into the box or hole; but you could generally tell when a California cart was coming half a mile away by the squeaking. I have seen the families of the wealthiest people go long distances at the rate of thirty miles or more a day, visiting in one of these clumsy two-wheeled vehicles. They had a little framework around it made of round sticks, and a bullock hide was put in for a floor or bottom. Sometimes the better class would have a little calico for curtains and cover. There was no such thing as a spoked wheel in use then. Somebody sent from Boston a wagon as a present to the priest in charge of the mission of San José, but as soon as summer came the woodwork shrunk, the tires came off, and it all fell to pieces. There was no one in California to set tires. When Governor Micheltorena was sent from Mexico to California he brought with him an ambulance, not much better than a common spring wagon, such as a market man would now use with one horse. It had shafts, but in California at that time there was no horse broken to work in them, nor was there such a thing known as a harness; so the Governor had two mounted vaqueros to pull it, their riatas being fastened to the shafts and to the pommels of their saddles.

The first wagons brought into California came across the plains in 1844 with the Townsend or Stevens party. They were left in the mountains and lay buried under the snow till the following spring, when Moses Schallenberger, Elisha Stevens, who was captain of the party, and others went up and brought some of the wagons down into the Sacramento Valley. No other wagons had ever before reached California across the plains. Mr. Schallenberger still lives at San José. He remained a considerable part of the winter alone with the wagons, which were buried under the snow. When the last two men made a desperate effort to escape over the mountains into California, Schallenberger tried to go with them, but was unable to bear the fatigue, and so returned about fifteen miles to the cabin they had left near Donner Lake, as it was afterwards called, where he remained, threatened with starvation, till one of the party returned from the Sacramento Valley and rescued him.

Elisha Stevens was from Georgia and had there worked in the gold mines. He started across the plains with the express purpose of finding gold. When he got into the Rocky Mountains, as I was told by his friend, Dr. Townsend, Stevens said, "We are in a gold country." One evening, when they had camped for the night he went into a gulch, took some gravel and washed it and got the color of gold, thus unmistakably showing, as he afterwards did in Lower California, that he had considerable knowledge of gold mining. But the strange thing is that afterwards, when Mr. Stevens passed up and down several times over the country between Bear and Yuba rivers, as he did with the party in the spring of 1845 to bring down their wagons, he should have seen no signs of gold where subsequently the whole country was found to contain it.

The early foreign residents of California were largely runaway sailors. Many, if not most, would change their names. For instance, Gilroy's ranch, where the town of Gilroy is now located, was owned by an old resident under the assumed appellation of Gilroy. Of course, vessels touching upon this coast were liable, as they were everywhere, to lose men by desertion, especially if the men were maltreated. Such things have been so common that it is not difficult to believe that those who left their vessels in early days on this then distant coast had cause for so doing. To be known as a runaway sailor was no stain upon a man's character. It was no uncommon thing after my arrival here for sailors to be skulking and hiding about from ranch to ranch until the vessel they had left should leave the coast. At Amador's ranch, before mentioned, on my first arrival here, I met a sailor boy named Harrison Pierce, aged eighteen or twenty, who was concealing himself until his vessel should go to sea. He was one of the men who went with me from Marsh's ranch to Sutter's. Californians would catch and return sailors to get the reward which, I believe, captains of vessels invariably offered. After the vessel had sailed and there was no chance of a reward, the native Californians gave the fugitives no further trouble.

At that time the only trade, foreign or domestic, was in hides, tallow, and furs, but mostly hides. With few exceptions the vessels that visited the coast were from Boston, fitted out by Hooper to go there and trade for hides. Occasionally vessels would put in for water or in distress. San Francisco was the principal harbor; the next was Monterey. There was an anchorage off San Luis Obispo; the next was Santa Barbara, the next was San Buenaventura, then San Pedro, and lastly San Diego. The hides were generally collected and brought to San Diego and there salted, staked out to dry, and folded so that they would lie compactly in the ship, and thence shipped to Boston. Goods were principally sold on the vessels; there were very few stores on land; that of Thomas O. Larkin[34] at Monterey was the principal one. The entrance of a vessel into harbor or roadstead was a signal to all the ranchers to come in their little boats and launches laden with hides to trade for goods. Thus vessels went from port to port, remaining a few or many days according to the amount of trade.

---

[34] Thomas O. Larkin came to California from Boston in 1832 with the intention of engaging in the milling business. He located at Monterey, became U. S. consul, and did much towards bringing the country under the American flag.

I have said that there was no regular physician in California. Later, in 1843, in a company that came from Oregon, was one Joe Meeks, a noted character in the Rocky Mountains. On the way he said, "Boys, when I get down to California among the Greasers I am going to palm myself off as a doctor"; and from that time they dubbed him Dr. Meeks. He could neither read nor write. As soon as the Californians heard of his arrival at Monterey they began to come to him with their different ailments. His first professional service was to a boy who had his toe cut off. Meeks, happening to be near, stuck the toe on, binding it in a poultice of mud, and it grew on again. The Governor, Micheltorena, employed him as surgeon. Meeks had a way of looking and acting very wise, and of being reticent when people talked about things he did not understand. One day he went into a little shop kept by a man known as Dr. Stokes, who had been a kind of hospital steward on board ship, and who had brought ashore one of those little medicine chests that were usually taken to sea, with apothecary scales and a pamphlet giving a short synopsis of diseases and a table of weights and medicines, so that almost anybody could administer relief to sick sailors. Meeks went to him and said, "Doctor, I want you to put me up some powders." So Stokes went behind his table and got out his scales and medicines, and asked, "What kind of powders?" "Just common powders—patient not very sick." "If you will tell me what kind of powders, Dr. Meeks—" "Oh, just common powders." That is all he would say. Dr. Stokes told about town that Meeks knew nothing about medicine, but people thought that perhaps Meeks had given the prescription in Latin and that Dr. Stokes could not read it.

But Meeks' reign was to have an end. An American man-of-war came into the harbor. Thomas O. Larkin was then the United States consul at Monterey, and the commander and all his officers went up to Larkin's store, among them the surgeon, who was introduced to Dr. Meeks. The conversation turning upon the diseases incident to the country, Meeks became reticent, saying merely that he was going out of practice and intended to leave the country, because he could get no medicines. The surgeon expressed much sympathy and said, "Dr. Meeks, if you will make me out a list I will very cheerfully divide with you such medicines as I can spare." Meeks did not know the names of three kinds of medicines, and tried evasion, but the surgeon cornered him and put the question so direct that he had to answer. He asked him what medicine he needed most. Finally Meeks said he wanted some "draps," and that was all that could be got out of him. When the story came out his career as a doctor was at an end, and he soon after left the country.

In 1841 there was likewise no lawyer in California. In 1843 a lawyer named Hastings arrived via Oregon. He was an ambitious man, and desired to wrest the country from Mexico and make it a republic. He disclosed his plan to a man who revealed it to me. His scheme was to go down to Mexico and make friends of the Mexican authorities, if possible get a grant of land, and then go to Texas, consult President Houston, and then go east and write a book, praising the country to the skies, which he did with little regard to accuracy. His object was to start a large immigration, and in this he succeeded. Hastings' book was published in 1845, and undoubtedly largely induced what was called the "great immigration" of 1846 across the plains, consisting of about six hundred. Hastings returned to California in the autumn of 1845, preparatory to taking steps to declare the country independent and to establish a republic and make himself president. In 1846 he went back to meet the immigration and to perfect his plans so that the emigrants would know exactly where to go and what to do. But in 1846 the Mexican War intervened, and while Hastings was gone to meet the immigration California was taken possession of by the United States.

These doubtless were the first plans ever conceived for the independence of California. Hastings knew there were not enough Americans and foreigners yet in California to do anything. He labored hard to get money to publish his book, and went about lecturing on temperance in Ohio, where he became intimate with a fellow by the name of McDonald, who was acting the Methodist preacher and pretending, with considerable success, to raise funds for missionary purposes. At last they separated, McDonald preceding Hastings to San Francisco, where he became bartender for a man named Vioget, who owned a saloon and billiard table, the first, I think, on the Pacific Coast. Hastings returned later, and, reaching San Francisco in a cold rain, went up to Vioget's and called for brandy. He poured out a glassful and was about to drink it when McDonald, recognizing him, leaned over the bar, extended his hand, and said, "My good temperance friend, how are you?" Hastings, in great surprise, looked him in the eyes, recognized him, and said, "My dear Methodist brother, how do you do?"

Chapter 4

THE DISCOVERY OF GOLD

IT is not generally known that in 1841—the year I reached California—gold was discovered in what is now a part of Los Angeles County. The yield was not rich; indeed, it was so small that it made no stir. The discoverer was an old Canadian Frenchman by the name of Baptiste Ruelle, who had been a trapper with the Hudson's Bay Company, and, as was not an infrequent case with trappers, had drifted down into New Mexico, where he had worked in placer mines. The mines discovered by Ruelle in California attracted a few New Mexicans, by whom they were worked for several years. But as they proved too poor, Ruelle himself came up into the Sacramento Valley, 500 miles away, and engaged to work for Sutter when I was in Sutter's service.

New Mexican miners invariably carried their gold (which was generally small, and small in quantity as well) in a large quill—that of a vulture or turkey buzzard. Sometimes these quills would hold three or four ounces, and, being translucent, they were graduated so as to see at any time the quantity in them. The gold was kept in by a stopper. Ruelle had such a quill, which appeared to have been carried for years. Now it so happened that almost every year a party of a dozen men or more would come from or return to Oregon. Of such parties, some—perhaps most of them—would be Canadian French, who had trapped all over the country, and these were generally the guides. In 1843 it was known to everyone that such a party was getting ready to go to Oregon. Baptiste Ruelle had been in Sutter's employ for several months, when one day he came to Sutter, showed him a few small particles of gold, and said that he had found them on the American River, and he wanted to go far into the mountains on that stream to prospect for gold. For this purpose he desired two mules loaded with provisions, and he selected two notedly stupid Indian boys whom he wanted to go into the mountains with him, saying he would have no others. Of course he did not get the outfit. Sutter and I talked about it and queried, what does he want with so much provision—the American River being only a mile and the mountains only twenty miles distant? And why does he want those two stupid boys, since he might be attacked by Indians? Our conclusion was that he really wanted the outfit so that he could join the party and go to Oregon and remain.

Such, I believe, was Ruelle's intention, though in 1848, after James W. Marshall had discovered the gold at Coloma, Ruelle, who was one of the first to go there and mine, still protested that he had discovered gold on the American River in 1843. The only thing that I can recall to lend the least plausibility to Ruelle's pretensions would be that, so far as I know, he never, after that one time, manifested any desire to go to Oregon, and remained in California until he died. But I should add, neither did he ever show any longing again to go into the mountains to look for gold during the subsequent years he remained with Sutter, even to the time of Marshall's discovery.

Early in the spring of 1844 a Mexican working under me at the Hock farm for Sutter, came to me and told me there was gold in the Sierra Nevadas. His name was Pablo Gutierrez. The discovery by Marshall, it will be remembered, was in January, 1848. Pablo told me this at a time when I was calling him to account because he had absented himself the day before without permission. I was giving him a lecture in Spanish, which I could speak quite well then.

Like many Mexicans he had an Indian wife; some time before, he had been in the mountains and had bought a squaw. She had run away from him and he had gone to find and bring her back. And it was while he was on this trip, he said, that he had seen signs of gold. After my lecture, he said, "Senor, I have made an important discovery; there surely is gold on Bear River in the mountains." This was in March, 1844. A few days afterward I arranged to go with him up on Bear River. He went five or six miles into the mountains, when he showed me the signs and the place where he thought the gold was. "Well," I said, "can you not find some?" "No," he said, "because I must have a 'batea.'" He talked so much about the "batea" that I concluded it must be a complicated machine. "Can't Mr. Keiser, our saddle-tree maker, make the batea?" I asked. "Oh, no." I did not then know that a batea is nothing more nor less than a wooden bowl which the Mexicans use for washing gold. I said, "Pablo, where can you get it?" He said, "Down in Mexico." I said, "I will help pay your expenses if you will go down and get one," which he promised to do. I said, "Pablo, say nothing to anybody else about this gold discovery, and we will get the batea and find the gold."

As time passed I was afraid to let him go to Mexico, lest when he got among his relatives he might be induced to stay and not come back, so I made a suggestion to him. I said, "Pablo, let us save our earnings and get on board a vessel and go around to Boston, and there get the batea; I can interpret for you, and the Yankees are very ingenious and can make anything." The idea pleased him, and he promised to go as soon as we could save enough money to pay our expenses. He was to keep it a secret, and I believe he faithfully kept his promise. It would have taken us a year or two to get enough money to go. In those days there were every year four or five arrivals, sometimes six, of vessels laden with goods from Boston to trade for hides in California. These vessels brought around all classes of goods needed by the Mexican people. It would have required about six months each way, five months being a quick trip.

But, as will be seen, our plans were interrupted. In the autumn of that year, in 1844, a revolt took place. The native chiefs of California, José Castro and ex-Governor Alvarado, succeeded in raising an insurrection against the Mexican governor, Micheltorena, to expel him from the country. They accused him of being friendly to Americans and of giving them too much land. The truth was, he had simply shown impartiality. When Americans had been here long enough, had conducted themselves properly, and had complied with the colonization laws of Mexico, he had given them lands as readily as to native-born citizens. He was a fair-minded man and an intelligent and good governor, and wished to develop the country. His friendship for Americans was a mere pretext, for his predecessor, Alvarado, and his successor, Pio Pico, also granted lands freely to foreigners, and among them to Americans.

The real cause of the insurrection against Micheltorena, however, was that the native chiefs had become hungry to get hold again of the revenues. The feeling against Americans was easily aroused and became their main excuse. The English and French influence, as far as felt, evidently leaned toward the side of the Californians. It was not open, but it was felt, and not a few expressed the hope that England or France would some day seize and hold California. I believe the Gachupines—natives of Spain, of whom there were a few—did not participate in the feeling against the Americans, though few did much, if anything, to allay it. In October Sutter went from Sacramento to Monterey, the capital, to see the governor. I went with him. On the way thither, at San José, we heard the first mutterings of the insurrection. We hastened to Monterey and were the first to communicate the fact to the Governor. Sutter, alarmed, took the first opportunity to get away by water, returning home. In a few days the first blow was struck, the insurgents taking all the horses belonging to the Governor at Monterey, setting the Governor and all his troops on foot. He raised a few horses as best he could and pursued them on foot. However, I understood that a sort of parley took place at or near San José, but no battle, surrender, or settlement.

Meanwhile, having started to return to Sutter's Fort, 200 miles distant, I met the Governor returning to Monterey. He stopped his forces and talked with me half an hour and confided to me his plans. He desired me to beg the Americans to be loyal to Mexico; to assure them he was their friend, and in due time would give them all the lands to which they were entitled. He sent particularly friendly word to Sutter. Then I went on to the mission of San José and there fell in with the insurgents, who made that place their headquarters. I stayed all night and the leaders, Castro and Alvarado, treated me like a prince. The two insurgents protested their friendship for the Americans, and sent a request to Sutter to support them.

On my arrival at the fort the situation was fully considered, and all, with a single exception, concluded to support Micheltorena. He had been our friend; he had granted us land; he promised, and we felt sure that we could rely upon, his continued friendship; and we felt sure, indeed, we knew, we could not repose the same confidence in the native Californians. This man, Pablo Gutierrez, who had told me about the gold in the Sierra Nevadas, was a native of Sinaloa, Mexico, and sympathized with the Mexican governor and with us. Sutter sent him with dispatches to the Governor stating that we were organizing and preparing to join him. Pablo returned, and was sent again to tell the Governor that we were on the march to join him at Monterey. This time he was taken prisoner with our dispatches and hanged to a tree, somewhere near the present town of Gilroy. That, of course, put an end to our gold discovery; otherwise Pablo Gutierrez might have been the discoverer instead of Marshall.

But I still had it in my mind to try to find gold; so early in the spring of 1845 I made it a point to visit the mines in the south discovered by Ruelle in 1841. They were in the mountains about twenty miles north or northwest of the mission of San Fernando, or say fifty miles from Los Angeles. I wanted to see the Mexicans working there, and to gain what knowledge I could of gold digging. Dr. John Townsend went with me. Pablo's confidence that there was gold on Bear River was fresh in my mind, and I hoped the same year to find time to return there and explore, and if possible to find gold in the Sierra Nevadas. But I had no time that busy year to carry out my purpose. The Mexicans' slow and inefficient manner of working a mine was most discouraging. When I returned to Sutter's Fort the same spring, Sutter desired me to engage with him for a year as bookkeeper, which meant his general business man as well. His financial matters being in a bad way, I consented. I had a great deal to do besides keeping the books. Among other undertakings we sent men southwest into the Sierra Nevadas, about forty miles from the fort, to saw lumber with a whipsaw. Two men would saw of good lumber about 100 or 125 feet a day. Early in June I framed an excuse to go into the mountains to give the men some special directions about lumber needed at the fort. The day was one of the hottest I had ever experienced. No place looked favorable for a gold discovery. I even attempted to descend into a deep gorge through which meandered a small stream, but gave it up on account of the brush and the heat. My search was fruitless.

The place where Marshall discovered gold in 1848 was about forty miles to the north of the saw-pits at this place. The next spring, 1849, I joined a party to go to the mines on and south of the Cosumne and Mokelumne rivers. The first day we reached a trading post—Digg's, I think, was the name. Several traders there had pitched their tents to sell goods. One of them was Tom Fallon, whom I knew. This post was within a few miles of where Sutter's men sawed the lumber in 1845. I asked Fallon if he had ever seen the old saw-pits where Sicard and Dupas had worked in 1845. He said he had, and knew the place well. Then I told him I had attempted that year to descend into the deep gorge to the south of it to look for gold. "My stars!" he said. "Why, that gulch down there was one of the richest places that have ever been found in this country;" and he told me of men who had taken out a pint cupful of nuggets before breakfast.

Frémont's first visit to California was in March, 1844. He came via Oregon, traveling south and passing east of the Sierra Nevadas, and crossing the chain about opposite the Bay of San Francisco, at the head of the

American River, and descending into the Sacramento Valley to Sutter's Fort. It was there that I first met him. He stayed but a short time, three or four weeks perhaps, to refit with fresh mules and horses and such provisions as he could obtain, and then set out on his return to the United States.

Sutter's Fort was an important point from the very beginning of the colony. The building of the fort and all subsequent immigrations added to its importance, for that was the first point of destination to those who came by way of Oregon or direct across the plains. The fort was begun in 1842 and finished in 1844. There was no town until after the gold discovery in 1848, when it became the bustling, buzzing center for merchants, traders, miners, etc., and every available room was in demand. In 1849 Sacramento City was laid off on the river two miles west of the fort, and the town grew up there at once into a city. The first town was laid off by Hastings and myself, in the month of January, 1846, about three or four miles below the mouth of the American River, and called Sutterville. But first the Mexican War, then the lull which always follows excitement, and then the rush and roar of the gold discovery prevented its building up until it was too late. Attempts were several times made to revive Sutterville but Sacramento City had become too strong to be removed. Sutter always called his colony and fort "New Helvetia," in spite of which the name mostly used by others before the Mexican War was Sutter's Fort or Sacramento, and later Sacramento altogether.

Sutter's many enterprises continued to create a growing demand for lumber. Every year, and sometimes more than once, he sent parties into the mountains to explore for an available site to build a saw-mill on the Sacramento River or some of its tributaries, by which the lumber could be rafted down to the fort. There was no want of timber or of water power in the mountains, but the cañon features of the streams rendered rafting impracticable. The year after the war Sutter's needs for lumber were even greater than ever, although his embarrassments had increased and his ability to undertake new enterprises became less and less. Yet, never discouraged, nothing daunted, another hunt must be made for a mill-site. This time Marshall happened to be the man chosen by Sutter to search the mountains. He was gone about a month and returned with a most favorable report.

James W. Marshall went across the plains to Oregon in 1844, and thence to California the next year. He was a wheelwright by trade, but being very ingenious, he could turn his hand to almost anything. So he acted as carpenter for Sutter and did many other things, among which I may mention making wheels for spinning wool, and looms, reeds, and shuttles for weaving yarn into coarse blankets for the Indians, who did the carding, spinning, weaving, and all other labor. He had great, almost overweening confidence in his ability to do anything as a mechanic. I wrote the contract between him and Sutter to build the mill. Sutter was to furnish the means; Marshall was to build and run the mill, and have a share of the lumber for his compensation. His idea was to haul the lumber part way and raft it down the American River to Sacramento and thence, his part of it, down the Sacramento River and through Suisun and San Pablo bays to San Francisco for a market. Marshall's mind, in some respects at least, must have been unbalanced. It is hard to conceive how any sane man could have been so wide of the mark, or how anyone could have selected such a site for a saw-mill under the circumstances. Surely no other man than Marshall ever entertained so wild a scheme as that of rafting sawed lumber down the cañons of the American River, and no other man than

Sutter would have been so confiding and credulous as to patronize him.

It is proper to say that under great difficulties, enhanced by winter rains, Marshall succeeded in building the mill—a very good one, too, of the kind. It had improvements which I had never seen in saw-mills, and I had had considerable experience in Ohio. But the mill would not run because the wheel was placed too low. It was an old-fashioned flutter wheel. The remedy was to dig a channel or tail-race through the bar below to conduct away the water. The wild Indians of the mountains were employed to do the digging. Once through the bar, there would be plenty of fall. The digging was hard and took some weeks. As soon as the water began to run through the tail-race, the wheel was blocked, the gate raised, and the water permitted to gush through all night. It was Marshall's custom to examine the race while the water was running through in the morning, so as to direct the Indians where to deepen it, and then shut off the water for them to work during the day. The water was clear as crystal, and the current was swift enough to sweep away the sand and lighter materials. Marshall made these examinations early in the morning while the Indians were getting their breakfast. It was on one of these occasions, in the clear, shallow water that he saw something bright and yellow. He picked it up—it was a piece of gold! The world has seen and felt the result. The mill sawed little or no lumber; as a lumber enterprise the project was a failure, but as a gold discovery it was a grand success.

There was no excitement at first, not for three or four months—because the mine was not known to be rich, or to exist anywhere except at the saw-mill, or to be available to anyone except Sutter, to whom everyone conceded that it belonged. Time does not permit me to relate how I carried the news of the discovery to San Francisco; how the same year I discovered gold on the Feather River and worked it; how I made the first weights and scales to weigh the first gold for Sam Brannan; how the richest of the mines became known by the Mormons who were employed by Sutter to work at the saw-mill, working about on Sundays and finding it in the crevices along the stream and taking it to Brannan's store at the fort; and how Brannan kept the gold a secret as long as he could till the excitement burst out all at once like wildfire.

Among the noted arrivals at Sutter's Fort should be mentioned that of Castro and Castillero, in the fall of 1845. The latter had been before in California, sent, as he had been this time, as a peace commissioner from Mexico. Castro was so jealous that it was almost impossible for Sutter to have anything like a private interview with him. Sutter, however, was given to understand that as he had stood friendly to Governor Micheltorena on the side of Mexico in the late troubles he might rely on the friendship of Mexico, to which he was enjoined to continue faithful in all emergencies. Within a week Castillero was shown at San José a singular heavy reddish rock, which had long been known to the Indians, who rubbed it on their hands and faces to paint them. The Californians had often tried to smelt this rock in a blacksmith's fire, thinking it to be silver or some other precious metal. But Castillero, who was an intelligent man and a native of Spain, at once recognized it as quicksilver, and noted its resemblance to the cinnabar in the mines of Almadén. A company was immediately formed to work it of which Castillero, Castro, Alexander Forbes, and others were members. The discovery of quicksilver at this time seems providential in view of its absolute necessity to supplement the imminent discovery of gold, which stirred and waked into new life the industries of the world.

It is a question whether the United States could have stood the shock of the great rebellion of 1861 had the California gold discovery not been made. Bankers and business men of New York in 1864 did not hesitate to admit that but for the gold of California, which monthly poured its five or six millions into that financial center, the bottom would have dropped out of everything. These timely arrivals so strengthened the nerves of trade and stimulated business as to enable the government to sell its bonds at a time when its credit was its life-blood and the main reliance by which to feed, clothe, and maintain its armies. Once our bonds went down to thirty-eight cents on the dollar. California gold averted a total collapse and enabled a preserved Union to come forth from the great conflict with only four billions of debt instead of a hundred billions. The hand of Providence so plainly seen in the discovery of gold is no less manifest in the time chosen for its accomplishment.

It is a question whether the United States could have stood the shock of the great rebellion of 1861 had the California gold discovery not occurred. Bankers and business men of New York did not hesitate to admit that but for the gold of California, which monthly poured [illegible] of millions into that financial centre, the bottom would have dropped out of everything. [illegible] [illegible] to [illegible] the move[illegible] of trade and [illegible] progress of [illegible] the government as well as the world, at a time when its credit was [illegible] and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] to foot, credit, and [illegible] [illegible] supplies [illegible] were [illegible] [illegible] on the [illegible] California gold [illegible] a total collapse and sudden [illegible] preserved. Union we come forth from the great conflict with only four billions of debt instead of a hundred billions. The hand of Providence so plainly seen in the discovery of gold is nowhere manifest as the time chosen for its accomplishment.

In Camp and Cabin

IN

CAMP AND CABIN.

Mining Life and Adventure, in California During 1850 and Later.

BY REV. JOHN STEELE,
AUTHOR OF "ACROSS THE PLAINS IN 1850," AND "THE SCHOOLMATES, AN EPIC OF THE WAR OF 1861-5."

PUBLISHED BY J. STEELE,
LODI, WIS.

COPYRIGHT 1901.

Introduction to the Original Edition

THE following pages are not fiction; but rather confirm the aphorism that "Facts are stranger than fiction," even in common life.

They embrace the writer's experience and observations in California for about three years, as recorded in his daily journal, beginning in September, 1850.

Some of these incidents have gone into history; many will be remembered by surviving miners; and children of the early pioneers will recall the stories of their father's life in the mines.

Returning to Wisconsin, the author spent some time in study, and was engaged in teaching in southwest Missouri when the Civil War began; joined the Union army, and at the close of the war became a minister in the Methodist Episcopal church; and is now a member of the West Wisconsin Conference. This journal, written without thought of publication, has been laid aside through all the busy intervening years.

Recently, having occasion to refer to it, the author was impressed with the fact that here was faithfully delineated the everyday life and experience of the average miner, and under conditions which only California, in that early day, could furnish.

Here are the various incidents, just as they happened; ludicrous, solemn, serious, tragic, inexpressibly sad, but always interesting.

In Camp and Cabin is the sequel to *Across the Plains in 1850*, and as that describes life on the Plains in an early day, so this presents daily life in California's most interesting period.

In Camp and Cabin

Chapter 1

I BECOME A GOLD MINER

ON Monday, Sept. 23, 1850, after a journey of over six months our little company reached Nevada City in the gold mines of California, and on the morning of that day we were all together for the last time.

In the trials of our long journey across the plains, we became well acquainted; mutual kindness and help had taught us to respect each other, and filled our hearts with grateful memories, to be cherished through life. Although their personnel is given in *Across the Plains in 1850*, they will appear again in these pages, and I therefore insert their names. Those from Lee County, Iowa; John L. Young, George Matlock, Abraham Hughes, Isaiah J. Hughes, Robert McCord, John Donnelley, Thomas Hunt, Anderson Tade, and Drury Farley.

From Iowa County, Wisconsin; William E. Shimmans, Henry Callanan, John Callanan, William Kingsbury, Burton Wait, and Thomas Dowson.

From Columbia County, Wisconsin; John Steele. Fifteen men and the boy who kept the journal of the journey recently published under the title of *Across the Plains in 1850*.

We were not only wearied with our trip across the plains, but the little money in our possession when we encountered the traders, who had gone out on the trail to speculate with the incoming immigrants, had been paid for supplies of food, in order to prevent actual starvation, until we found ourselves nearly penniless in a land where bread and meat sold for a dollar a pound.

Our oxen, after their long journey, were not marketable, and were sent to a ranch in the Sacramento Valley where it would take months before their skeletons could acquire the requisite flesh to fit them for beef. In the meantime we were sustained by the hope of making our fortunes in the gold mines. But, without tools or the means to buy, how could we begin? Of course we must find employment, and expect our employers to furnish tools.

Having ascertained that wages, for those who worked in the drifts on Coyote Hill, were sixteen dollars a day, we felt happy at the prospect. Gold seemed to be abundant everywhere except in our pockets, and we had faith to believe that they would soon be replenished.

In the early morning of Tuesday, September 24, my mess, consisting of John L. Young, George Matlock, Abraham Hughes, Isaiah J. Hughes, Robert McCord, and John Donnelley, broke up; we started out to begin business in earnest, and all that forenoon I hurried from mine to mine, hopefully inquiring for work.

Sometimes I was asked, "Got any tools?" or "What's your wages?"

Replying, I would say, "I have no tools; just arrived; will work cheap until I get acquainted."

Occasionally there was a little hesitation, but generally an indifferent "Guess, we don't need you."

About noon I went to a restaurant and bakery, hoping to find something to satisfy the demands of an increasing appetite. Taking up a diminutive loaf, I inquired the price.

"Fifty cents," was the reply.

Searching my pockets I found thirty-five cents was my entire cash capital.

"All right," said the baker, "take the loaf; fifteen cents is nothing in California."

That little loaf, only a fair-sized biscuit, scarcely enough for a single meal, was all that stood between me and starvation.

Eating about half, and going down to Roger Williams' spring for a drink (old settlers of Nevada will remember that spring), I pursued my search for work, but even the eleventh hour passed, and no man had hired me. Night came on: perhaps it was hunger which made me despondent.

Visiting several camps of mine owners, as the workmen came in and were preparing supper, in conversation I learned that there was a special dread lest the rainy season might set in, and the deep mines either cave in or fill with water, causing their abandonment for the season.

I therefore resolved to seek employment in the deep mines, and by diligent inquiry learned enough of the methods of deep mining, drifting, timbering, etc., to intelligently carry on such work.

It was nearly midnight, when, under the shelter of my little tent, refreshing sleep gently stole away my sense of fatigue and hunger.

Awaking with the dawn, I was soon on the ridge among the deep mines. In anticipation of immediate work, and of probably descending into some damp, cool shaft, I put on my wamus of striped bed-ticking, such as was then worn in the lead mines of Wisconsin, and which I had brought from there.

The few mines employing two sets of hands were in active operation, the others silent and still; but within half an hour every windlass was turning, men were descending the shafts, tubs and boxes of gravel were being lifted by the long lines.

Hearing a man say that he had just finished his shaft, and was ready to begin drifting, I applied to him for work. My boyish appearance was not assuring, and my sunburnt face told that I had just arrived at the mines. He eyed me for a moment and inquired, "What do you want a day?"

"Just what you think I'm worth; in fact, I wouldn't mind working for my board until I get acquainted."

He simply said, "No," and went on counting a pile of blocks for timbering.

Removing a few steps, and looking for a place where help seemed to be needed, I saw a slender, sickly-looking man, one whom I could have handled with ease, approach the one I had just left, with the inquiry, "Do you want a drifter?"

He looked at the inquirer a moment and asked, "What do you want a day?"

"Sixteen dollars."

"Ain't that pretty high?"

"All right if your mine won't pay it," he said, turning away.

"Hold on, I want you right now, come along."

Here was a lesson for me, and I resolved to profit by it.

Approaching another shaft, which indicated readiness to begin drifting, I inquired, "Do you want a drifter?"

"Yes, what's your wages?"

"Sixteen dollars a day."

"That seems pretty steep."

"It's for you to say."

"Where are you from?"

"Wisconsin."

Just then a stranger to us both chimed in, "When you see a boy from Wisconsin wearin' them togs, he'll do in the mines anywhere."

"All right," said the mine owner, "go to work, and we'll see how it pays."

Stepping into a box about two feet square, its stout rope bail hooked to the windlass line, with a small pick and spade in my hand I was lowered about one hundred feet, to the bottom of the shaft, which was a round hole nearly four feet in diameter.

From the surface of the ground, the first forty feet was through rather loose gravel; then about twenty feet of bluish clay, below which lay very solid gravel, resting on a bed of granite rock. While there was more or less gold scattered in fine particles through all the gravel strata, the real "pay dirt" was embraced in a dark-colored stratum next to the bed rock, and something over a foot in depth.

The object was to remove this "pay dirt" as quickly as possible, filling it into the boxes and sending it up the shaft, in the meantime carefully separating the "non-pay dirt," and sending out as little of it as could be done in order to get at and remove the gold-bearing gravel.

Working with all possible diligence, by noon I had introduced and keyed up my first timbers. These timbers were four feet long and about one foot square, split from the large pines which grew on the hill. The posts were set firmly on the bed rock, a little over two feet apart, with a beam extending across the top of the two posts, making a kind of doorway from the shaft, into an excavation which I had already dug to the distance of six feet.

Probably I never did a better half day's work in California. Though I was without practical experience in mining, yet by acquaintance with miners in the lead region of Wisconsin, I had learned the importance of properly securing the bottom of a shaft, and of so fitting the timber ends to each other that it would be impossible for them to give way.

The miners at Nevada called this, "squaring the circle."

The shaft being circular, and the earth around it made to rest on a square of timbers, supported by posts, permitting openings on four sides, so that all the gravel underneath could be removed, and the entire structure remain firm, was a problem which involved a practical application of mathematics; but when this was secure, the other timbers were easily placed.

But with anxiety over my work, lest I might make a mistake, and the gnawing of hunger, having gone to work without breakfast, noon found me nearly exhausted; and hinting that it might take some time to prepare dinner, I was glad to dine with my employer, and, in payment, add an extra hour to my day's work.

In the evening, anticipating my need, he gave me an ounce of fine gold, worth sixteen dollars, and, going to the city, I laid in a supply of provisions, prepared my supper, and the next morning took breakfast before going to work.

By Saturday evening, September 27, with the timbers securely set, test drifts had been run on the bed rock, proving the mine to be very rich. Many of the tubs of gravel, with a capacity of less than half a barrel, contained over one thousand dollars worth of gold.

The next Monday three other hands were set at work, and it required only about three weeks to complete the job and finish my first effort at gold mining. Mr. Anson Jones, my employer, must have realized a large sum from his mine; how much I do not know, but he seemed well satisfied, and cheerfully paid me up.

In the meantime, having found a vacant place on another part of the hill, I laid claim to it, and had been doing only enough work to hold it until a thorough test could be made. To this I now gave attention. Two young men, Jim Hayes and Ed Ogden, who had taken claims adjoining mine, wanted me to buy them out, and, as they asked but little more than the value of their work, I did so.

The tide of immigration had brought wages down to nine dollars a day; so making a windlass and tub, buying a lifting line, and hiring Jim Hayes, I continued sinking the shaft, which was already about ten feet deep. We found a trace of gold in the gravel nearly all the way down, and in less than forty feet struck the bed rock.

The "pay dirt" was about two feet deep, and in a little pocket in the bed rock I found over twenty-five dollars, in fine gold in one pan of gravel. This was very encouraging, and, as the dreaded rains might set in at any time, I resolved to wash only as much gold as would pay expenses, and bring all the pay gravel to the surface, as soon as possible.

Cutting a large pine near by, and preparing timbers, we were ready for drifting. Employing a man named Mack (I never learned his full name) to run the windlass, Jim and I worked below.

While we were thus engaged, Mack was asked to bring some water from Roger Williams' spring. On his return he lowered it to me, and taking a drink, I passed a cupful to my companion, but just as he began to drink I snatched it from him, for I was sure there was something wrong with the water, It was quite clear, with no unpleasant taste, but it made me feel very badly.

Hayes had taken very little, but both of us were compelled to leave the mine, and within an hour it was evident that we would not be able to resume work that afternoon.

When questioned, Mack said he went first to Roger Williams' spring, but as there were so many people there he would be delayed in waiting his turn, and as the constant dipping kept the water muddy, he went across the creek and got the water at what seemed to be just as good a spring.

The place was said to abound in cinnabar, but whatever the water held in solution, it acted with bad effect on the stomach and bowels. I therefore settled up with the men and arranged for resuming work in the morning, but I never entered the mine again.

Suffering from the poisonous effects of the water, I went to my tent and lay down. On the plains we used bacon as an antidote for poisonous water and alkali, so I prepared some, and with hot coffee and bread completed my supper. It made me feel rather worse, so I slept but little during the night, while the wind through the drooping pine boughs above my tent kept up a constant dirge-like moan, adding to the feeling of loneliness and depression.

Morning found me too much exhausted to leave the tent, but as the door was on the lower side, I slid down, and placing my head on the split half of a small pine log, which formed a kind of door step, drew aside the cloth and looked out, hoping to see some human being who might be induced to bring me a doctor.

Hours passed; perhaps I sometimes slept, but that dirge-like song of the pine boughs never ceased. At times it was plaintive, sad, depressing; and again, like the full, rich tones of the organ, wonderfully inspiring, just as my own sensitive nerves responded to the strain.

At last a familiar form appeared among the trees, coming up the slope. Raising my hand and motioning to him, he observed the signal, and turned toward the tent. It was Dr. Callanan, the one of all others I most desired to see.

After a cordial greeting, a hurried examination, and fixing me as comfortable as possible on my pallet, he went to the city for medicine, which was duly administered; then leaving a dose to be taken "about dark"; and promising to see me in the morning, with a cheerful "Good day," he departed.

The hopeful inspiration of being under the care of a skilled physician cheered me greatly, and the afternoon and night passed with only an occasional consciousness of burning thirst. For several days, a confused recollection of the presence of the doctor and others was all that lingered in my mind. But I had been well cared for; the doctor had been very attentive, and at his suggestion a Mr. Sexton, an excellent nurse, devoted half his time to my care.

In my time of need, I was fortunate in having plenty of good friends; but before I was able to take care of myself, my expenses had exhausted all my earnings. If I continued to live, more money was necessary, and therefore my claims were offered for sale.

Some looked at them and reported, "They are off the range"; others said, "They are too shallow." At last a German, after making a thorough test, offered me two hundred dollars for the entire outfit, claims and tools. It was the best I could do; so he weighed out the gold, and I gave him a bill of sale.

The claims proved immensely rich; and a week afterward, when I began to walk out, meeting him on his way from the creek, where he had been washing gravel from the mine, he showed me his day's work; a common wooden water bucket, more than half full of fine gold. And this was only one day's washing. I could not estimate its value, but its weight seemed to be all the bucket could support.

When sufficiently recovered to walk, I naturally strolled around the city. There were a number of good stores, meat shops, bakeries, blacksmith shops, etc., but the gambling saloons were the terror of the town. Their rooms were spacious, supplied with music, and adorned with mirrors, pictures, and every device to attract the young, and induce them to gamble and drink.

Boys and young men from respectable homes, from quiet villages and country places in "the states," here spent their evenings, and formed associations and habits which wrought their ruin. Here, too, men crazed with drink and maddened by losses either killed themselves or others.

In those days scarcely a night passed that men were not killed, in or about the city. There seemed to be no organized government; or if such existed, people were too busy with their own affairs and interests to give attention to the execution of law; but so far as possible, each one tried to protect himself.

Fortunately, none of my associates were inclined to visit the saloons, though it must be confessed that there was such a witchery in the music, instrumental and vocal, that the masses were attracted and entranced, and in passing I found it difficult to resist the temptation to go in and listen.

One night, however, when trying to see a man in relation to some business matters, I was directed to a large saloon. From the door, through the smoky air, I saw him in a distant part of the room. Pausing to see how best to reach him through the throng, a man, with a large revolver in his hand passed me, quietly pushing his way through the crowd; so I followed in his wake.

As we neared the center of the room, I noticed that the hum of voices, representing all possible tones, was gradually hushed by a song, which, from an elevated platform, a young man was singing to the accompaniment of a violin. For a moment the rudest became quiet. All were intently listening to the thrilling strains of Burns' Highland Mary, and leaning to catch every word, as with softest pathos he sang,

"O pale, pale now the rosy lips,
I oft have kissed sae fondly,
And closed forever the spark'ling glance
That dwelt on me sae kindly."

Just then the man I had followed flourished his pistol, and breaking the breathless hush of sweet melody by a hoarse volley of bitter oaths, commenced firing at a man who faced us, and was, apparently, trying to reach the door.

Instantly all was uproar, and everyone rushed for the door. The victim of the assault vainly tried to reach it, but fell a little inside. The shots into the crowd were effective; three were killed, and several wounded; and then the assailant sprang over the bar, passed out at a back door, and made his escape.

I learned afterward that two of the men killed had had no part in the quarrel, but simply by accident came in range of the assassin's pistol, and so lost their lives. The whole affair impressed me with the folly and danger of being a mere spectator at such a place: a lesson of practical value to me.

During my convalescence I became acquainted with Mr. Daniels, from Baltimore, who kept a small supply of groceries in a tent, and, as his place was convenient, I did most of my trading with him. He manufactured butter from tallow and lard, and it looked and tasted so much like real butter, that, without comparing it with the genuine article, which long since had been only a memory, I could not tell the difference. However, he deceived no one, but sold it for just what it was. He never explained the process of its manufacture, and whether he was the originator of oleomargarine I do not know.

One afternoon he introduced me to his friend, Mr. Phillips, and then related the following story. When the California gold excitement reached Baltimore, Daniels was a dealer in general merchandise, and Phillips was employed by the month as a porter in his store. Thinking he saw an opportunity to make an immense fortune, Daniels closed his business in Baltimore, and to the value of $25,000 selected groceries, clothing, and hardware, such as he thought suitable for the California market, and shipped them to San Francisco by way of Cape Horn.

Phillips wanted to go to California also, so Daniels loaned him the amount necessary to pay his expenses, and on reaching San Francisco, Phillips hired out to work by the day in order to earn his passage money, and pay his way to the mines.

Daniels, on reaching San Francisco with his goods, sold part to pay storage and transportation for the rest, and at last succeeded in getting what was left to the mines on the South Yuba. Just then the Nevada mines were discovered, and he found himself deserted by the miners, who flocked to Deer Creek, and he was compelled to move his goods to Nevada City.

By this time his capital stock was greatly reduced, and upon making an inventory he found that, even at the high rates charged in the mines, the value of his remaining stock was far less than when he left Baltimore. In fact, he was nearly bankrupt, and was now disposing of his limited stock, with the expectation of taking up the pick and shovel and trying his fortune in the mines. He had not only lost much precious time, but his capital was nearly gone.

In the meantime, Phillips, according to his reckoning, had earned enough to repay

Daniels, meet his expenses to the mines, and supply himself with an outfit of tools. He therefore sought a settlement with his employer, for as yet he had drawn but little of his wages, but found it impossible to obtain his pay in cash, and after considerable delay was compelled to take some city lots or nothing.

After receiving his deeds in due and legal form, he started out to find his property, thinking perhaps he might have a place to pitch a tent, but he was utterly disappointed and disgusted to find every lot covered with the waters of the bay, and they seemed to be of little or no value.

Homesick and discouraged he hunted another job, careful now to draw his pay every week, and deploring the hard fortune which kept him away from the mines, for which he had come so far.

While engaged as porter at a hotel, a real estate dealer asked him whether he owned certain lots, giving the number and description; and receiving an affirmative answer, replied, "I knew they belonged to a man of your name, but did not think that you were the one. We have been looking them up, and if you want to sell, come to our office, and I think we will buy them."

Some time afterward, a man who had overheard the conversation, said to him, "I think I could afford to give you fifty thousand dollars for those lots." This set him to making inquiry in regard to prices and buyers. The rapid development of that part of the city had brought them into demand, and he finally sold them for eighty-three thousand dollars.

Now, he had no need to go to the mines, except to repay his benefactor, and hence his trip to Nevada City. But how strangely the fortunes of those men had changed since leaving Baltimore.

How often it happens thus. The most carefully arranged plan and confidently expected success brings only disappointment, while apparent failures and expected disappointments result in unexpected success. Sometimes it seems enough to induce people to suspend judgment, abandon their plans, and trust to luck; but the wise ones never do so; knowing that "to err is human," judgment is matured, and plans perfected; and yet, there was a proverb common in California: "It is the unexpected that happens."

Chapter 2

FURTHER MINING ADVENTURES

IT would be impossible to describe the depression which for a time came over me as I realized that not only had a fortune slipped from my grasp, but health had also gone with it. However, youth and hope whispered of returning health and boundless opportunities, and therefore as strength permitted, my time was devoted to prospecting.

The hills, ravines, and gulches about Nevada were visited only to be found unpromising, occupied, or claimed. Still, rich mines on all sides showed how hope to others had ended in fruition and lured me on, each night fatigued, but with the dawn hopeful and ready to renew the search.

Returning from one of my prospecting tours and ascending the ridge between Deer Creek and the Yuba, I struck into the immigrant road, and turning towards Nevada intended to pass the night at Cold Spring Cottage, a hotel about fifteen miles from the city. It was late in the afternoon, and, in the shade of the dense pine and cedar trees darkness came suddenly, and I groped my way to the hotel only to find it closed.

There seemed no alternative but to trudge on to Nevada; but, weakened by recent sickness, worn with the toil and journey of the day, and also without supper, I found the task too great, and utterly gave out.

So turning a short distance from the road, and creeping under the drooping branches of a low cedar, I lay down to rest and sleep. Sleep did not readily come to my relief. Sometime in the night I heard a team and wagon pass along the road, but it was not going towards the city, and therefore could afford me no aid. At last, though somewhat chilled, I waked from a refreshing sleep to find that day had come.

But had I known what was passing around me during the night, I would have spent it among the topmost branches of the cedar, rather than on the ground, for when resuming my journey I found the broad footprints of a grizzly bear. It came from the opposite side, followed the road for some distance, showing that the tracks were made since the wagon had passed, and finally turned in the direction toward where I lay, and must have come quite near.

How he failed to find me was inexplicable. I shuddered at the thought of awakening in his strong embrace and made up my mind never to give a bear another such chance.

Afterward, while reading the Bible, I came to these words, which recalled the incident and impressed me deeply: Psalm iv., 8. "*I will both lay me down in peace and sleep, for thou, Lord, only makest me to dwell in safety.*" Truly, God's providence is a better protection than human wisdom, strength and skill; for when we have exhausted all these we are still safe under his care.

Reaching Nevada, the specter of starvation again began to haunt me, but I was, at least, thankful for improved health and for having been saved from the grizzly's teeth.

About this time I accepted Fred Dinkler's offer of nine dollars a day to work in his mine on Coyote Hill. It was some sixty feet deep, and had originally embraced four rods square, but was now nearly half worked out. The timbers, especially around the shaft, were in a very unsafe condition.

There were two sets of hands; the one to which I belonged, going to work at noon and working twelve hours, was relieved at midnight.

It was November, but as yet little rain had fallen, and Fred hoped to have the mine worked out before it was flooded, or made unsafe by the rains, so the work was pushed with all diligence.

One night about ten o'clock we heard a crash in the shaft, and immediately the timbers began to settle and break. There were five of us in the mine; four in the drifts, and one who dragged the buckets to the shaft, unhitched the empty one, and hitched the full one to the windlass line.

Part of the shaft had caved in, and, to all appearance, we were about to be buried in a deep grave. The shaft was so filled that the bucket could only be lowered to within about four feet of the bottom; and as we listened, we could hear an occasional boulder, coming down, strike against it. Just then some one provoked a smile by saying, "Boys, that sounds like kicking the bucket."

But when our candles became dim, indicating that the air was shut off, that slang allusion to death had a terrible meaning. However, the man at the shaft worked his way up, opened a passage into the shaft, got into the bucket, and was safely raised to the top. Again the bucket was carefully lowered, and so, one by one, all of us at last escaped.

When I went up, I carried my candle, in order to examine the shaft, which seemed firm until near the top, where the gravel was loose, and a considerable bank had caved off.

The boulders continued to fall, with an occasional thud, but, fortunately, none fell while any of us were on our way up. Of course the midnight relay could not go to work, and most of the workmen never again entered the mine.

At noon the next day, after examining the shaft and removing the boulders that were likely to fall, three of us went down, sent up the gravel from the bottom of the shaft, and entered the drifts. The posts all leaned a little towards a worked out and abandoned mine, which had caved in; the immense weight of earth was indicated by the heavy timbers being bent over the posts in the form of ox yokes; and the great mass of earth overhead had settled eight or ten inches.

After placing posts under the broken timbers, and adding a few extra beams, we resumed digging, and although conscious of danger, four of us continued the work until the "pay dirt" was all removed.

Discouraged with the prospect at Nevada, in company with Robert McCord and Drury Farley, I went to the south fork of the Yuba River. From the "Sugar Loaf" hill above Nevada, we followed a trail among large pines and cedar trees, on a broad upland between Deer Creek and the Yuba, striking into the immigrant road near Cold Spring

Cottage. Taking the road eastward until we found a trail, which we had been told would lead us to Jefferson on the Yuba, and following down a steep, winding spur, in about three miles we reached a trading post on the river bank, with a few deserted cabins in sight.

This was Jefferson, about twenty-five miles from Nevada; the stream, shut in by almost perpendicular mountains, was about four rods wide and two feet deep; but being a series of eddies and cascades it was difficult to estimate its size.

Considerable mining had been done along the river, but when the Nevada mines were discovered, these were abandoned; and merchants, who, at great expense had brought their goods, were compelled to pack them to other places.

About a mile above Jefferson, on the river bank we found a narrow bar, which had been overlooked by the prospectors. Digging down to the slate bed rock, and washing a pan of gravel, we found about a dollar's worth of gold in fine, bright scales.

This was encouraging; and repairing a cast-away rocker, we went to work in earnest, made a thorough test of the bar, and in two days, with our defective rocker, succeeded in taking out over a hundred dollars' worth of gold.

Next we arranged for putting in a long-tom and sluice. We found sufficient lumber in the abandoned mines, but it required a journey to Nevada to obtain material for hose. This was simply strips of stout drilling, sewed in the form of a pipe, by which the water was conveyed from the river into our sluice. While our work on the bar lasted it paid well, but in three weeks the narrow strip of "pay dirt" had all been washed, and we moved to another place.

In the meantime I became interested in a company which was organized at Nevada for the purpose of taking provisions and mining implements to the north fork of Feather River, a place said to be very rich in gold.

The company numbered twenty, and forty mules were loaded, mostly with provisions; and eighteen of the company, and the four men who owned the mules, started in November. One of our number, a young man named John Donnelley, being ill, as I was profitably employed, I concluded to wait for him.

Saturday, Dec. 14, 1850. This afternoon Drury Farley was informed by a messenger, that his friend, Anderson Tade, near Nevada, with whom I became acquainted on the plains, was very ill, and desired him to come. As I expected soon to start for Feather River, and had business to arrange at Nevada, the next morning McCord and I accompanied Farley, arriving at the city late in the afternoon.

I now learned of the death, a few days before, of my very dear friend, George Matlock, with whom I had crossed the plains, and who had been instrumental in saving my life. A man whose Christian character was more than a profession: sweet in spirit, self-denying, ready to make sacrifice for the sake of others. A leader in every difficult and dangerous enterprise, and one whose prudent, firm, intelligent courage insured success. My own father could not have treated me with greater kindness than I received from him. But alas! alas! the inexpressible loss and sorrow of his widow and family when the story of his death reaches them in their far distant Iowa home.

Tuesday, Dec. 17, 1850. This day I visited Messrs. Zachary Bowers and Abijah Davis, acquaintances from Wisconsin, whom I found engaged in mining on Deer Creek, about two and a half miles below Nevada.

When I quit work for Mr. Dinkler he paid me only a small part of my wages, saying, when he had time to wash the gravel, within a few days, he would pay the rest. Weeks had passed, and now, after three days' failure to find him, I began to suspect that he was trying to evade me. When told he was at his cabin, and going there, I always found that he had just gone. Again and again, when a time was set to meet him, where his workmen said he expected to be, he failed to appear. It was reported that though he had taken large quantities of gold from his mines, he would never pay a dollar if he could help it. At last, learning that two men expected to begin work for him in the morning, I went to the place at an early hour, and sitting among some mine timbers awaited his approach.

He was promptly on hand, and I, just as promptly, claimed his attention. He was surprised, but soon regained his presence of mind, and said, "I knew you were in the city, and if I could pay you, I would have hunted you up." "But," said I, "any of these grocerymen will lend you, for a few days, the small amount you owe me."

"O, no, no, no, people don't lend money without security."

"Of course, but you can give security; step into this store and we can settle this matter in a few minutes."

"Wait till I get my men at work."

"Yes, I'll wait."

The men were already at work, lowering timbers into the mine, so, with reluctance he accompanied me into the store. I explained to the merchant the circumstances; that I was about to leave, and would he not be so kind and obliging as to loan the money to Mr. Dinkler for a few days, and, of course, he could give ample security.

"Certainly," said the merchant, "I *could* advance the money, but I believe he has it, and if he won't pay you without trouble, he would not pay me."

This seemed to settle the matter, and a look of satisfaction came over Dinkler's face, as he turned to go out. There was still another resort, and I resolved to frighten him into the payment.

I sprang before him to the door, and presenting a pistol, with a loud voice ordered him to "Stop! Now sir, I'm going away this morning, but this matter must be settled first; you can pay it now, or never have another chance."

His voice trembled as he shouted, "Don't, don't shoot!" And springing to the counter, upon which stood scales for weighing gold, he drew from his pocket a large buckskin purse of the shining metal, weighed out the amount of my claim, and handed it to me.

The high words and flourish of the pistol attracted attention, and men on their way to work crowded into the store. The merchant explained the matter; and when Mr. Dinkler was about to leave, several blocked his way, saying: "No, Fred, it's your treat; you intended to cheat that boy out of his wages: now you shall treat the crowd; set out the cigars."

How many were taken I do not know, but the amount of the "treat" must have been nearly as much as he had owed me. However, he silently weighed out the gold, and the crowd dispersed.

Chapter 3

EXPEDITION TO FEATHER RIVER

WEDNESDAY, Dec. 18, 1850. Returning to the Yuba, McCord and I encountered deep snow on the uplands. For several days there had been heavy rains in the valleys, and at the same time snow had fallen to a great depth on the mountains.

After a few days, Donnelley having recovered from his illness, and being ready for the journey to Feather River, joined us at the Yuba; but now that the snow was so deep and soft, we hesitated about starting on our northern trip. However, we improved the time in mining; we did a great deal of prospecting along the river and found an occasional rich "pocket," but the general outlook was not promising.

Two or three miles above Jefferson, on the south bank of the river, stood the deserted village of Washington. With a large number of vacant cabins it contained several empty store buildings and quite a large hotel, closed and silent. A few miles farther up, where the rocks rose perpendicularly on both sides of the river, leaving but a narrow margin, was the hamlet of Cañonville, entirely deserted.

Lumber had been sawed, and the river had been taken from its channel and carried some distance in a flume, thus laying bare the bed, but the enterprise did not pay, and after large expenditure of time and money was given up.

Above this there seemed no chance for mining, as the river ran between perpendicular banks of rock. At Washington there were a few miners, like ourselves, prospecting, and so, in places, along the river. During the past summer a vast amount of labor had been expended in this vicinity, but it evidently had failed to pay expenses. Finding a fair prospect on Poorman's Creek, a small tributary of the Yuba from the north, we built a cabin, and for awhile our mining operations were quite profitable.

Wednesday, Jan. 1, 1851. This afternoon Drury Farley and Thomas Hunt, an elder half-brother, arrived from Nevada City, bringing the sad news of the death of Mr. Anderson Tade, whom, in the closing hours of the old year, they had laid by the side of his friend and neighbor, Mr. George Matlock. His widow and family, whose home is near Fort Madison, Iowa, must receive the painful message that, while hoping to brighten their lives and better their condition, he had traveled thus far from them only to find a grave.

Throughout the mining camps there was much sickness and many deaths, occasioned, doubtless, in part by scanty and stale provisions, which induced scurvy; also, by working in damp places, under ground and in the water. With proper food and shelter, the climate must be healthful; but the conditions under which most miners lived and labored invited disease and death, and it was difficult to better the conditions.

Although we had planned to make the trip to Feather River before snow had fallen on the mountains, and all the company except Donnelley and I had gone; while profitably employed we were willing to wait, but having worked out our mine, and believing that the snow on the uplands had settled and become hard, we resolved to push out for Feather River.

Being joined by nine others, who went as prospectors, we decided to start on Monday, the 27th of January, 1851. But when the morning of our departure dawned, a misty rain made us hesitate until 10 A. M., and then, like a train of packed mules, we filed up the mountain. Besides our blankets, some extra clothing, rifles, and ammunition, Donnelley and I carried a pick and spade, pan for washing gold, frying pan, and tin cups; and bread, flour, and bacon enough to last two weeks. All were equally well loaded, some even more heavily.

Following up a very steep, rocky spur, early in the afternoon we came out on the "divide" between the south and middle forks of the Yuba. Here the snow was several feet in depth, and softened by the mist which continued; we sank deeply, and weighed down by our heavy burdens, made slow progress.

About dark, finding a grove of large fir trees, and beneath them but little snow, we camped, built large fires, prepared supper, and placing plenty of fir boughs on the ground, over which we spread our blankets, "lay down to pleasant dreams." Looking up through the long, drooping branches which canopied our sleeping apartment, we saw that the clouds had cleared away and the stars blinked brightly down.

We prepared breakfast before day, and shouldering our packs, were away with the dawn. It was our hope that the rain would settle the snow and the frost of the past night make a crust sufficiently hard to bear us up. In this, however, we were disappointed. In places we could walk a few steps on the surface, but we generally broke through, passing over some shrub or hidden branch, and as the snow was very deep, we would sink to our shoulders.

Thus we floundered on, and early in the afternoon, down through a chaos of cragged ravines, and about three miles distant, obtained a glimpse of the middle fork of the Yuba, across which lay our route. In our descent at first we were aided by the snow, but this gradually became less, and being on the north or shady side of the mountain, the snow terminated in a vast sheet of ice, over which the greatest care was required to keep from going down too rapidly. After rolling some distance, Mr. McGee, trying to steady himself by a small pine, remarked, "The Bible says that the wicked stand in slippery places, but I can't and there ain't one in this crowd who can."

Accompanied with a chorus of loud talk, a clatter of camp kettles, tin pans and ovens, the party at last reached the river. Considering the rapidity with which some of us came down, and the rocks, crags, and projecting roots over which we glided, it was a marvel that there were no broken bones; but all had suffered more or less from bruises, scratches, and torn clothing.

Crossing the river on a flume, by an Indian trail we ascended the opposite mountain, now on the sunny side, and about seven miles from the river camped at Indian Creek.

Wednesday, Jan. 29. Making an early start, we ascended a steep, rocky, treeless spur about two miles, and then entered upon a slope, mantled with large pine, fir, and cedar trees and crossed with an occasional cliff. For awhile our path was quite pleasant, but on the uplands we again encountered snow, and, as we ascended each slope, it became deeper, until only the tree tops appeared above its surface. Fortunately, it was hard enough to bear us up, unless we trod in the vicinity of a tree top, when we were liable to go down among the branches.

As we advanced, the great summit ridge of the Sierra Nevada toward the northeast towered above forest and cliff, and reminded me of my first lessons in the old English reader.

> "The increasing prospect tires our wandering eyes,
> Hills peep o'er hills, and Alps on Alps arise."

Descending the mountain through a magnificent forest of the usual pine, fir, and cedar, about dark we camped on the mountain side half a mile from Downieville, a mining village at the forks of the North Yuba.

Thursday, Jan. 30. The sky being overcast with clouds, and a slight rain falling, made us hesitate about starting, and in the meantime one of our company came into camp saying, "I reckon somebody has struck it rich down there, and covered up their prospect hole so as to hide it."

With picks, shovels, and pans, three of us accompanied him to the bottom of a deep, wild glen; not that we intended to "jump" any one's claim, but as a possible clue to diggings above and below on this side of the river. There was no snow, and on the mossy bank of a rill could be seen the outlines where the ground had been broken; but the turf was so nicely adjusted that but few traces were visible.

Spading away the soft earth to the depth of about three feet, we found—not a gold mine, but that which made us start back with horror—a blue shirt sleeve on the arm of a corpse. Gently the body was uncovered and raised to the surface; water was brought and, washing away the mire, disclosed the features of a young man, of probably twenty years; about five feet in height; dark brown hair; his only clothing a blue woolen shirt, dark brown pantaloons, and heavy boots.

His pockets were empty and there was nothing about him to reveal his name. Traces on each side of his head indicating where a bullet had passed through, were the only marks of violence upon his person. Evidently he had been murdered but a few days since and his body concealed in this wild glen.

Tears filled our eyes as we thought of his untimely fate, and that father, mother, brothers, and sisters may lovingly await his return until hope deferred makes the heart sick. The death-sealed lips could not reveal the name of the murderer to men, but there is a Witness who knows all about it, and sometime the criminal will stand at the judgment bar of God.

The remains were taken to Downieville, and without being identified, were buried there. Long afterward, when passing, I made diligent inquiry, and learned that no knowledge of the man's name, friends, or home had been found. To use a phrase common among mountaineers, he had been "rubbed out."

In and about Downieville some very rich mines had been discovered, but at this time the place seemed overrun with prospectors. While some were making fortunes, and others doing fairly well, a great many, without mines or work, were in desperate straits.

Some of our company found acquaintances and concluded to remain. Late in the afternoon the rest of us left the village, and ascending the northern mountain about eight miles, camped in a dense forest; where, shoveling away the snow, and spreading boughs of fir and cedar on which to lay our blankets, we made a comfortable place to sleep.

The older members of our company were greatly fatigued with wading the deep snow, and those who were younger relieved them of part of their burden. But with all the toil and exposure, there is something invigorating in this mountain air which sharpens the appetite and promotes health, so that some of our party seem never to tire. John Cheny, a young man of eighteen, strong and healthy, greatly enjoys this out-door life. This afternoon he carried a fifty-pound sack of flour, his blankets, pick, shovel, and gun, and yet, in the steepest and worst part of the journey, he relieved an elderly man of a large roll of blankets.

As for victuals, we have learned to simplify the process of cooking, and perhaps to regard quantity rather than quality. When the campfire is built, a mass of snow, held near it on a wooden fork, soon becomes like a well filled sponge and furnishes water for coffee and drinking purposes.

Also in making bread, a little snow is put into the mouth of a sack of flour and kneaded carefully until a stiff dough is formed; then lifting it out, it is molded with the hands until of proper consistency for bread. It is then suspended near the fire, on a bough, with several branches cut and sharpened for the purpose. Turning it occasionally, the cake is soon thoroughly baked.

Sometimes a slice of bacon is suspended on a wooden fork by the fire and as it fries, the fat is permitted to fall on the bread, thus making it more palatable. It is astonishing how small a culinary outfit is really needed.

Just above our camp stood several large dead pines, probably fire killed, but overgrown, from bottom to top, with long, yellow moss. After dark we set this on fire and the flames soon streamed far above the woods, making immense torches, and illuminating our camp; and, as the wood was filled with pitch, they continued to burn most of the night.

After all my companions had lain down to sleep, while writing up my journal, I noticed that one of the burning trees was about to fall, and, fearing it might come down upon the camp, I watched it until there was evidence that it would fall across the rocky slope above us. Therefore, without waking my companions, I spread down my blanket, and was about to join them on our bough-built bunk, when the tree fell; it broke into several pieces on the rocks and one great fiery mass, rolling directly over our bed, stopped against the logs which composed our campfire.

The crash awakened the sleepers, and while they all escaped, there was no time to remove the bedding. However, shaking the coals from the blankets, and changing the boughs to another place, most of them were soon again sleeping soundly.

Meanwhile, John Cheny planned to bring two more pieces of the burning tree, and with the three great logs piled together, have a splendid campfire. With considerable effort he brought the second piece, then prepared skids and aroused the camp to help him bring the third, but the others were too tired and sleepy to respond. Finally McGee advised him to lie down and not disturb them.

"Well," replied Cheny, "we'll not leave here till morning anyway, and we might as well be rolling logs as doing nothing else."

This was his characteristic: rest and sleep seemed quite unnecessary; so he persevered, obtained help, and when the three immense logs were properly grouped, and wrapped in roaring flames, he lay down to enjoy his watch-fire, and was soon asleep.

Friday, Jan. 31. A severe frost so hardened the snow that we walked on the surface, and taking an early start, were soon above the line of heavy timber, and by noon, up a slippery ascent, reached the Yuba Caps, a mass of perpendicular rocks which crown the summit of the mountain. The younger members of the company had an ambition to climb these rocks; this, however, we found to be impracticable at this side, but from their base we obtained a magnificent view of the Sacramento Valley and the Coast Range.

Around the bottom of these rocks the snow was almost perpendicular, with a surface of hard, smooth ice. There was no alternative but to cut footsteps in the snow, and thus pass around toward the right. As the work was very laborious, we took turns, one going forward with the hatchet, and the others following in his footsteps. In places it was so steep as to require handholds as well as footsteps, and some experienced great difficulty in keeping their balance, as they looked down from the dizzy height, which we estimated at about a mile, where, if one missed his footing, he must fall.

In looking down, it seemed like one unbroken sheet of icy snow; but we knew, a discovery made while coming up the mountain, that it was crossed by several precipices of great height. Just how far it was around the Yuba Caps, we could hardly guess; to us it seemed about two miles, and it was a relief when, crossing the "divide" toward the north, we again reached the timber line.

At Cañon Creek, in a grove of small fir trees, we made a place to camp, by shoveling away the snow, which was about four feet deep.

Saturday, Feb. 1. The day was bright and cold, and we made good progress over snow of great depth. In a small valley we found a place where wolves had burrowed in the snow and brought to the surface tufts of hair, which indicated that horses or mules had perished there. We passed it without special attention, but the next afternoon, descending from the divide to Downie's Diggings on Poorman's Creek, we found James Ward, one of our company who had left Nevada last fall, painfully going about on crutches, and from him we learned the secret of the wolf holes.

He informed us that they had had a very pleasant trip to the north fork of Feather River, where they pitched their camp and prepared for a winter's work. He and four others then undertook to bring the forty mules back to Nevada City. Some time in December, while on the divide, they were overtaken by a severe snow storm, and took shelter for the night in the valley above named. By morning they were snowed in, and after remaining two days, and the storm still continuing, feeling sure that the mules must perish, they tried to save themselves by going back to Downie's Diggings.

The snow had whitened the trees and rocks, and as it still continued to fall, the outlines of the mountains could not be seen; consequently they lost their way, disagreed as to the proper direction, and separated. Ward and one other took one direction, and the three others the opposite, and, so far as I have been able to learn, they were never again heard from.

Ward and his companion struggled through the snow during the day; at night, climbing down the branches of a fir tree, they buried themselves in the snow, and, as they had blankets and provisions, were quite comfortable. But the following day was intensely cold, and the next morning, coming out of their shelter from under the snow, they could not agree as to the direction, and finally they separated. Fortunately, the same day Ward was found by his brother Thomas, who had a mine on Poorman's Creek, and was crossing the ridge to Onion Valley on snowshoes.

It seemed the merest chance that they should meet, and had James followed the ridge in the direction he was going when found, he would have passed the only camp for many miles, and must have perished. As it was, his feet were so badly frozen that for more than a month he was unable to walk without help.

After considerable search his companion was found on a rock on the summit of a high ridge which he had climbed, evidently, in the hope of seeing some landmark to guide him on his way; but, overcome with cold, he had frozen to death.

At Downie's Diggings, on Poorman's Creek, Donnelley and I reluctantly parted from those who had accompanied us from Poorman's Creek near the South Yuba; both streams, we were told, deriving their names from the same pioneer miner, Mr. Poorman. Having obtained all the information possible from Mr. Ward as to our route and the location of our company, we replenished our stock of provisions and were ready to pursue the journey.

Monday, Feb. 3. From nearly the summit of the divide between the Yubas and Feather River, we followed down Poorman's Creek to its junction with Hopkins' Creek, then down this to Nelson's Creek, occasionally compelled by impassable cañons to leave the valley and cross high, steep, rocky, and icy spurs. About dark we waded Nelson's Creek, and ascending the mountain side camped among thickets of manzanita, which furnished a supply of excellent fuel for our campfire.

The morning was fair, but in the afternoon clouds gathered, and a slight rain fell, which made us regret our shelterless condition; but when we lay down to sleep beside our campfire the rain had ceased and the stars twinkled encouragingly above us.

The next day was pleasant and we made good progress over a high mountain, and toward night descended into a creek valley, where we found the tracks of a puma, or California lion. We spent some time in hunting it, but from what we afterward learned respecting the size and ferocious nature of these animals, it was just as well that we failed to find it.

One object in selecting our route and making our journey in this way was to obtain a general knowledge of the gold mines. We might have selected an easier way, but we wanted to visit the best mining region, and this took us across the spurs of the great Sierra Nevada.

Heretofore we had found plenty of miners at work, and could gather information from them; now, however, we were beyond the usual range of prospectors, and we therefore made it a point to examine the bed and banks of all the streams we passed, hoping to find gold in such quantities as to make profitable a return at some future time. Not finding even a trace of gold along the creek, night closed our work; and kindling a large campfire, we cooked supper, and were soon asleep.

Wednesday, Feb. 5. Our way led over a high, steep, heavily timbered mountain, on which the snow was very deep, and just at sunset we began the descent to the middle fork of Feather River. The deep snow at first rather assisted, but, terminating in ice, the way became more steep, and was crossed by an occasional cliff.

While the light lasted we could mark our way and slide from tree to tree, and sometimes, by rocks and branches of trees, swing ourselves down the ledges; but clouds overcast the sky, the light faded, and darkness became intense long before we reached the river. At times, as we lingered on the brink of some precipice and tried to rest or plan for the next move, it seemed as though we could neither retain our position nor go on with safety.

A pack of mountain wolves were on our trail and their fierce howls, mingled with the deep bass of the river reverberating from the cañon below, and all strangely softened and subdued by the sigh of the pines around us, seemed intoning a dirge in weird, depressing voices from out the night.

At last we reached the river in safety, somewhat bruised and scratched, but just how we made the trip in the dark it is doubtful whether either of us could tell. Donnelley had his outfit intact; I had lost my haversack, containing my Bible, writing material, journal, and most of my ammunition. As I stumbled on the brink of a precipice it had slipped over my head and fallen below the cliff.

Kindling a fire on a little sandbar, we soon had the wolves at bay. As our guns were wet, we took off the barrels, placed the breech in the fire, and, when sufficiently dry, they were fired, wiped, and reloaded. Then, after supper, replenishing our fire, or rather, from a large pile of driftwood, building two, we lay down on the sand between them and the wolves serenaded us until we slept.

The next morning while Donnelley prepared breakfast I went in search of my haversack, which I found lying at the foot of a precipice over a hundred feet high. As I looked up and thought how near I had come to falling over it in the darkness, a cold shudder crept over me.

It was our intention to cross the river at this point, but we had descended into a cañon, and the swift current and perpendicular banks warned us not to make the attempt. So we spent the entire day in search of a crossing, and at night camped on the same side, several miles below. The threatened storm had passed and the sky was clear, but being on the shady side of the great mountain, we scarcely saw the sun; and our way was very icy and dangerous.

The next morning we found a place where the water was not very swift, but, without an axe, we were unable to obtain logs large enough to float ourselves across. However, preparing a little raft of dry branches, and placing our guns, packs, and clothing thereon, we pushed it boldly into the deep, clear current, and were soon at the opposite bank. The river was fringed with ice, and cold as was the water, the air seemed even colder, and made our teeth chatter with the chill; but hastily dressing, and shouldering our loads, the exercise of climbing the mountain soon warmed us up.

After making the ascent and crossing some deep ravines we found an Indian trail, and as it lay in our course, followed it. After several miles it descended to the head of a small stream, down which we were led through a broad and beautiful valley, at night-fall camping on its bank.

Saturday, Feb. 8. Early this morning, leaving the stream to our left, we crossed some heavily timbered hills, the earth being a beautiful bright red, and in the afternoon came to what seemed to us the same stream we had left in the morning, though now much larger; we crossed it, followed down some distance, crossed again, and camped.

At both crossings the water was so deep that we were compelled to undress, in order to ford it without getting our clothes wet. The sensations produced by wading to the arms in such a current, breaking the ice and climbing out on a snow-covered rock and dressing in a frosty atmosphere, can only be known by experience. Anyway, after the last crossing we danced around our blazing campfire a long time before we ceased to shiver.

Last night there came a storm of sleet, after which the air became very cold and continued so all day. Crossing some mountain-like hills, about noon we came, as we supposed, to the north fork of Feather River, near the forks.

Finding a place where the current ran deep and smooth, when our preparations were complete we hurriedly undressed and pushed through, finding it not only cold, but difficult and dangerous. However, we succeeded in getting all our traps safely over, but with the feeling that another such effort might be fatal to us both; and when afterward we returned to the same place we dared not attempt to cross.

It was our intention to follow up the north branch of this stream, but we were compelled, on account of its cañons and steep banks, to ascend the mountain which terminated between the forks, and thus keep in sight of the valley of the north branch. Here again we struck an Indian trail in the snow and pursued it until it reached the head of a wide prairie-like slope, where we camped.

As we came up and along the mountain, we saw a line of marsh (cattail) flags tied together, and suspended from tree to tree. Beginning at a point near the river, it ascended the mountain, and after following along the ridge for several miles, diverged from our course, and we left it. It seemed too frail to mark a boundary line; doubtless it was the work of Indians, and we were greatly puzzled to know what it meant.

Monday, Feb. 10. At dawn we were on our way, and late in the afternoon reached a small valley surrounded with a belt of large pines. Across this the snow was marked with

Indian paths, and smoke arising from the woods at the foot of a mountain spur revealed the place of their village.

Having been warned that these Indians were hostile, we hesitated about leaving the shelter of the timber, and yet realized that we were dangerously near the town. Putting fresh caps on our rifles and pistols and closely scanning the openings around, we took a main path, so as not to excite suspicion, even though seen from a distance, and hurrying across the open flat, were soon again under cover of the woods.

Here we found a trail leading to a small brook; following up this, and walking in the water, where our tracks could not be seen, we went about a mile up the creek. Then taking off our boots and tying our pantaloons close to our ankles, so that our footprints in the snow resembled moccasin tracks, we crossed a low, timbered ridge, over a mile northward to another small brook. Here we wrung the moisture from our socks, put on our boots, and followed up the rill several miles, into a deep cañon, where we camped.

As we were compelled to have a fire, not only to warm ourselves, for the night was very cold, but to dry our boots and socks, which had become very wet while walking in the water and snow, we built it in the most secluded place we could find, under an overhanging rock at the side of the cañon, in front of which a large pine had fallen from the cliff above. Peeling some of the bark from the dead pine and laying it on the snow furnished quite a good floor, and a comfortable place on which to spread our blankets.

Here we cooked the last of our flour, moulding it into five small biscuits. These, with about half a pound of bacon, constituted our entire supply of provisions. Each taking a biscuit and a slice of raw bacon for supper, we lay down to sleep.

The proximity of the Indian village excited our fears, lest we had been discovered and might be attacked during the night, and our sleep was hardly as sound as usual. Toward morning a noise aroused me, but not fully; however, Donnelley gave me a shake, and said in a hoarse whisper, "They're coming, they're coming," and in an instant we were on our feet, with rifles ready in hand.

The fallen tree furnished a good breastwork, the fire had smouldered into darkness, and we stood listening in breathless silence. At first it sounded like the hurrying tread of many feet coming into the cañon a short distance above us; then there was stillness, and again a renewal of the noise. When day began to dawn we crept along under the shadow of the cliff and discovered that our fright had been caused by a small avalanche which had slid into the cañon, and was followed, at intervals, by masses of snow and rock. Possibly if we had not been fearing Indians it would not have disturbed us.

Ascending from our cañon, we took a northwesterly direction over deep snow and among pine, fir, and cedar trees of immense size. The air was piercing cold, and notwithstanding our constant struggle in the snow, we found it necessary to kindle a fire occasionally and thaw out.

This was easily done. The action of the wind generally cleared away the snow, leaving quite a space around the base of each tree, often, where the snow was deep enough, to the depth of eight or ten feet. So when we found a dead pine, we simply climbed down and set the moss and pitch on fire, and when warmed up climbed out and pursued our journey.

During the day we noticed several landmarks which had been described to us by Mr. Ward while we were at Downie's Diggings; and about noon we looked down into the valley of the north fork of Feather River. A wide plain, "The Big Meadows," stretched far to the northward, and near the upper extremity of these Meadows we were to find our company.

Our exertions were redoubled, and before night we had crossed the immigrant road and were near the upper boundary of the plain. This was indicated by a dark line of timber, behind which arose an array of glittering heights, which we supposed was the summit ridge of the Sierra Nevada. Some time after dark we turned into a grove near the river, kindled a fire, broke off a quantity of fir branches, spread them on the snow for a bed, and lay down and slept soundly until morning.

Chapter 4

THE RETURN FROM FEATHER RIVER

WEDNESDAY, Feb. 12. This morning, chilled by the keen night air, it was sometime before we were warmed up. With our utmost exertions, it was late in the afternoon when we reached the timber at the upper extremity of the Big Meadows. Ascending a high, bleak point, in hopes of seeing some signs of our company, Donnelley, who was first on the summit, exclaimed; "There they are; there they are," pointing to several columns of smoke curling above a dense forest about a mile distant.

For awhile we were delighted with the prospect of a plentiful supper and a comfortable night's rest. But all this vanished when, through an opening, we caught a glimpse of several Indian wigwams. We had found another Indian village, and were anxious to avoid the place which at first we had hailed with so much delight. The town was in the direction we wanted to go, and it was difficult to make a detour on either side without great labor and loss of time, owing to the nature of the surrounding country.

Following the ridge we were on would enable us to pass the town at a considerable distance; but we would almost certainly be discovered on the snow; even the night would hardly conceal us. We therefore resolved to go down into the timber and pass the village in the night.

It was now about sunset, and finding a place of shelter and concealment, we waited until the woods became dark; then, taking off our boots, we tied them to our packs. Fortunately we each had an extra pair of socks; these we put on, drawing the worn ones over them, tied down our pantaloons, and made our way.

Thinking it best to follow their paths in the snow, so as to avoid being tracked, we were brought nearer the village than we would otherwise have gone, and at one time supposed we had been discovered. We heard the tramp and saw the dimly outlined forms of several Indians coming towards us.

Stepping closely to the side of a large pine, we stood shoulder to shoulder with our rifles leveled toward the group. Escape seemed impossible, death inevitable, and our only hope, to die suddenly, and thus escape torture. We commended our souls to God. Donnelley was a devout Roman Catholic, and, in low breath, prayed fervently, "Jesus, Mary, and Joseph, have mercy on us."

We had actually surrendered all into the hands of God, and He had mercy on us. The Indians turned along another path and disappeared among the trees. It seemed like coming back to life. Hope revived and we hurried on. About midnight, finding a dead pine, from which we stripped a large piece of bark, we laid it on the snow for a bed. We dared not kindle a fire, but, eating a biscuit and a slice of raw bacon, greatly exhausted with fatigue and hunger, but grateful to God for our lives, we lay down and slept.

Thursday, Feb. 13. Chilled and benumbed, we were awake when the first traces of dawn appeared. Hastily folding our blankets, in hopes of finding some sign of our company we ascended above the timber line, frequently pausing to scan the woods and vales below. Sunrise found us on the summit, between two cone-like peaks. The immense scrolls of snow which crested the mountain flashed in the red sunlight, and presented a scene beautiful and grand beyond description.

Here we ate the last of our provisions, one small biscuit and a morsel of raw bacon. It seemed rather to sharpen our appetites, but we were excusable for not eating more.

Then, from various positions we anxiously scanned the landscape. There was the cliff; clustered pines in the river bend; the rocky point with its five dead pines; all of which Mr. Ward had described to us; but there were no recent signs of white men.

Under other circumstances the scene would have charmed us, but now a strange fear of not finding our company began to haunt us. Descending to the valley of the stream, we followed it up until noon, and still no traces of white men. All was silent as the grave, save the murmur of the river and the sigh of the pine tops.

Again we ascended a high ridge and took another long, anxious look. The hills seemed solemn and stern, the dark lines of timber appeared cheerless. Far over the snowy ridges we could see the towering summit of Mount Shasta, rising like a marble pyramid in the sky. Painful as was the thought, we were compelled to give up all hope of finding our company. Whether they had been butchered by the Indians, or had crossed the mountains to Klamath River, we could only guess; but we were satisfied that for months they had not been where Mr. Ward had left them.

Since approaching the immigrant road we had found places where camps had been established and trees chopped; and so at the point where we expected to find our company; but there was no evidence that any white man had visited these places since the snow fell. Not having a list of their names, we were unable to inquire for them personally in the Klamath, Pitt River, or other mines where they might have gone. A strange mystery enshrouded their fate, and what became of them we never learned, but we strongly suspected that the whole party of eighteen were surprised and killed by Indians.

But what were we to do? The unexpected had happened. Entirely destitute of provisions and already weakened with hunger, when we thought of the long distance to the nearest mining camp of which we knew, there seemed scarcely a hope that we could make the return trip.

However, as every hour of delay rendered escape less certain, we turned back and followed down the river with all possible speed. It was a journey for life, and we did our best. Stripping some bark from the sugar pine, we chewed it while passing along, and some time between midnight and morning we passed the upper Indian village, without paying much attention to the paths, and at the edge of the Big Meadows crept into a jungle of drooping firs to obtain a few hours' rest and sleep.

In all our journey there had been an unaccountable absence of game. When we began it wolves were generally within hearing at night, but we had not seen a deer, pheasant, or even a rabbit, though for several days we had been constantly on the watch for them. Possibly the deep snows had driven them from this region, or it may be that the Indians had taken all the game within their range.

We were not prepared with hook and line to try the streams for fish, but wherever we examined the rivers we had failed to find any, and, consequently, were not able to add anything to our original supply of provisions. We would gladly have slaughtered even a wolf for our supper, but in our extremity they, too, kept strangely out of our way.

Friday, Feb. 14. Although suffering extremely from hunger, we walked rapidly all day, and about sunset entered the timber at the lower extremity of the Big Meadows. It was our intention and hope to pass the Indian village during the night, but we were too tired to continue the journey. Fully conscious of the danger of remaining near the village, or trying to pass it in daylight, yet, in utter exhaustion, we crept into a clump of firs and slept several hours.

Before day the journey was resumed. Our sleep rested us somewhat, but the chill had so stiffened our joints that for awhile we made but little progress. However, in the morning twilight we safely passed the village, and about a mile below, struck the trail by which we had come up the river.

We were beginning to feel relieved of danger from Indians and were congratulating ourselves that escape now depended only upon our physical endurance, when, lo, we were hailed; and there, only a few rods in front, where our path swayed to the left, at the head of a ravine, up which, evidently, they had just come, stood two tall Indians, making signs for us to approach them.

"Don't let them think we are afraid," said Donnelley, and we promptly started toward them, instantly agreeing that we must make them travel with us that day, and not permit them to report us at their village, if we could possibly prevent it.

They were armed with bows and arrows, with small hunting knives in their belts, and as we came near, made signs, pointing to us, and then to the path, in the direction toward their town.

Donnelley, with one hand upon his pistol, with the other pointed first toward them and then to the path in the opposite direction. As we expected, they were inclined to resist. One succeeded in placing an arrow in his bow, but before he could raise it, Donnelley surprised him by presenting a pistol near his face. He understood what it meant and dropped the arrow.

At the same instant, before the other had placed the arrow in his bow, but held it in his right hand, anxious to avoid the report of firearms, I drew my hunting knife and grasped him by the shoulder; but Donnelley, fearing that he might seize me, leveled the pistol at his head.

With a quick movement, I drew a pistol, stepped back, and leveled it. Dropping the arrow, they both stood for a moment as if undecided and angry, but seeing that we had them in our power, they turned, and talking to each other, took the path, and we, putting up our pistols, followed a short distance behind. Presently they stopped, and evidently were about to raise a yell, but our rifles were quickly leveled upon them, and again they turned and pursued the path before us.

They kept watch of us every moment, and several times slackened their pace and acted as though they intended to turn upon us; when at the click of our locks, as we prepared to shoot, they would increase their pace; but they compelled our most diligent and constant attention.

In our weakened condition it was a terrible strain upon our nerves, for there was in our minds the inexpressible dread that we might have to shoot those Indians in order to save our own lives. The awful specter of death which haunted us, seemed to take away our sense of hunger and weariness, and no doubt under the excitement we traveled farther than we would otherwise have done. Near sunset we gave them to understand that they might return, which they did with an apparent good will.

We were sorry to compel them to travel all day without anything to eat, but in that respect we all fared alike. We would gladly have given them a good dinner, and valuable presents to remember us by, but we were pleased that our relations had been no more unfriendly.

We would rejoice to have gained their good will, but under the circumstances it seemed impossible, and it is doubtful whether the next white men whom they met were treated with the same consideration bestowed upon us. Fearing lest they might lurk on our trail and attack us during the night, from the shelter of a thicket we watched their retreating forms until they disappeared several miles distant. After this we traveled about five miles, and, obtaining a supply of pine bark to chew, crept into a jungle in hopes of finding rest and sleep.

Sunday, Feb. 16. With the first traces of dawn we were again on our way. We did not suffer very much from hunger, but, as we warmed up with exercise, we felt feverish, and for awhile traveled with comparative ease. I noticed that Donnelley's eyes were swollen and bloodshot, and at times we staggered from the path.

Passing near the brink of a steep ravine, Donnelley remarked, "Very likely there is gold down there," and pausing, we seemed to hear the sound of human voices. Listening, the tones were very distinct, but we could not distinguish the words. Then came the sound of digging with a pick, the scraping of a shovel on the rock, and the peculiar noise made by shoveling gravel into a tin pan.

Confident that a company of prospectors were at work in the ravine, we at once descended, not doubting but they could afford us something to eat. However, we failed to find the slightest trace of any human being. The snow lay undisturbed even by the foot of a rabbit, and the voices and sounds were purely imaginary. Listening, we heard them again, just above us, in a bend of the ravine, but when we reached the place, there were no signs.

For some time we were inclined to follow the illusion; our dismay was inexpressible. We did so want to make it true, but at last, realizing that we were only wasting time, we climbed out of our ravine and, fortunately, found our path.

Strangely enough, both of us seemed to hear whatever we listened for. Sometimes it was human voices, but never an articulate word, and sometimes it was the clang of mining operations. Several times we were tempted to turn from our path, and it was difficult to realize that the sounds were only illusions of the mind.

About noon we descended to the river where we crossed when coming up, but, looking at the distance and the swift, angry current, we realized that it would be impossible in our exhausted condition to cross in safety. We therefore turned down the river, hoping, at least, to find a safer crossing.

However, in several miles, we were surprised and delighted to find Mountaineer Lawson's mining camp. There were several white men and Pah Ute Indians working a placer mine on the bank of the river. Coming down the river, we saw that what we had taken for the valley of the north fork of Feather River was only a deep gulch, and the main stream, which we had visited above the Big Meadows, lay over the mountains toward the northwest.

From Mr. Lawson we obtained some flour and bacon, and in a few minutes I had a cake baking in one of their skillets. While waiting for the cake, Lawson, who was familiar with all that region, inquired of Donnelley about our journey, which was candidly described. Whereupon Lawson bluffly replied, "Don't tell me any such stuff as that; I know that country; it's not far from a hundred and sixty miles; you fellows never made that trip without eating."

In a moment we were very angry, and Donnelley laid his hand upon his pistol; but Lawson repeated, "Don't tell me any such stuff." He evidently did not believe what Donnelley had said, and we, having our veracity questioned and our honor contemned, were at once on our dignity and in no condition to reason or explain, and as we had already paid for the flour and bacon, we indignantly refused to have any further conversation with him.

After eating a little we both experienced nausea, and for awhile were unable to travel; gradually, however, the feeling passed away, and gathering up the fragments of our dinner, we hurried away, and camped at some distance down the river. By occasionally eating a little our stomachs regained their natural tone, but it was several days before our mental vision became clear.

The next day we did some prospecting along the river, and finally, crossing on a large pine which had been felled, camped with a company of prospectors.

Tuesday, Feb. 18. Our long spell of fair weather terminated last night in a snow storm, and this morning in the open camp found us literally snowed under, and the snow still falling. We had scarcely more provisions than were needed for breakfast, but on our way back to Downie's Diggings we expected to replenish our stock at the American Ranch, a place somewhere on the way to the middle fork of Feather River.

Ascending the mountain among large trees, everything enveloped with the same white mantle, with neither sun nor outlined hill in sight, we wallowed through the snow most of the forenoon, and finally disagreed as to our course. Whether we were going east or west neither could be absolutely certain, but each felt sure he was right. Donnelley had our pocket compass and I wanted him to examine it, but he was so sure of being right that he refused, and finally I told him I would not go in that direction any farther. Angry words followed, and suddenly he aimed his rifle at me. In an instant I leveled a pistol on him. Thus we stood for a moment. The Good Providence prevented our shooting.

Donnelley was first to understand the situation, and threw his rifle into the snow, where it sunk out of sight. As he picked it out of the snow, I knew it was too wet to fire, so putting up my pistol, I turned away, and there we parted.

I felt very badly. Hot tears trickled down my cheeks. We had crossed the plains together, had always been fast friends, and no shadow had ever before darkened our brotherly love. Strangely bewildered, I went on in the direction which I supposed led to the American Ranch.

In about an hour Donnelley again appeared, converging toward me, and when we met he simply said, "I believe this is the right direction," and we never mentioned to each other our terrible episode. But words could not express my joy in the consciousness that we were still friends.

I learned through our mutual friend, Robert McCord, that after we separated, Donnelley looked at the compass, and of course it was the merest accident that I happened to be right; had we slain each other there in the woods, it has seemed to me, that, because our minds were so unsettled, but little moral responsibility for the deed could have attached to us.

So, too, in our intercourse with Lawson; had we been able to have explained our situation calmly to him, he might have been of great service to us; but he, no doubt, thought we were trying to impose on him; and we, conscious of telling the truth, felt too keenly his expressed disbelief of our story to attempt any explanation.

Late in the afternoon the snow slackened some, and about dark we reached the American Ranch, a large log house at the edge of an open valley. Here we obtained some provisions, and fixed our camp under the branches of a large, low pine, on the bank of a clear brook.

Wednesday, Feb. 19. Last night when our hot coffee, bacon, and bread were ready, a young man came up from the American Ranch with the information that he was "plumb strapped," which was miner's parlance for saying that he was entirely destitute of both money or provisions. Our hunger had been too recent to permit us to be unmindful of his need, so we gave him a cordial invitation to take supper and breakfast with us, which he did, and finally concluded to accompany us to Downie's Diggings on Poorman's Creek, and join us in a mining enterprise.

In the morning, while waiting for us to prepare a lunch for dinner, he lay down on his blanket by the fire, and in an unguarded moment turned on his side, when out of his pocket rolled a handful of gold and silver coins. Hastily gathering them up, he remarked, "*I didn't know I had it.*"

The idea of a person carrying such a weight in his pantaloons pocket and not knowing it, brought to our faces an incredulous smile, whereupon he seemed embarrassed, and at last, without even saying good-bye, left in the direction of the American Ranch.

No effort was made to persuade him to remain with us and carry out our mining project. Even without his falsehood, his pocket full of coin indicated that he was a professional gambler. Gold dust is the currency of the mines, but a gambler always keeps a supply of coin as an attractive display, and should he lose in his game, always pays in dust.

We crossed the middle fork of Feather River at the mouth of Nelson's Creek, and proceeded thence over a high mountain in a heavy snow storm to Onion Valley, arriving at the only buildings, two overcrowded cabins, about dark. However, a prospector kindly permitted us the use of a tent. Here we mixed and kneaded a cake for our supper, and undertook to bake it at a fire built outside against a large pine log. But the constant high wind showered the snow upon it and prevented the formation of the usual delicate crust, and after holding it awhile in the flame it was pronounced "done," and although stained with smoke and tasting of pitch, it satisfied our hunger, and that was all the very best could have done.

Thankful for shelter, we enjoyed the unusual luxury of sleeping with our boots off, something we had not done for weeks, owing to the cold and our exposed condition. It was a great relief to our weary feet, and we slept well.

There was a heavy gale during the night, and morning brought no abatement of the storm. The tent door was buttoned in the center, but the wind had burst off the lower button and had made a rent in the opposite upper end, where it found exit, and had piled the snow from the bottom of the door to the peak of the tent. We lay under the drift, our heads only projecting from it near the door, and sheltered by our caps. Our boots, somewhere under the snow bank, when found were so frozen, being wet when taken off, that they had to be thawed before we could put them on.

Fortunately, within about ten rods, several men were trying to save their horses and mules in the shelter of the woods by the aid of a great fire. Thither we waded the snow barefoot, put on our socks, thawed our boots, and finally succeeded in getting into them.

Next, going to one of the large cabins, we inquired of a man behind a bar at the side of the room whether we could obtain breakfast, "Yes, sir, breakfast, or any other meal you want, just as soon as you can get a place at the table."

A narrow puncheon table, probably twelve feet long, occupied the center of the room; on either side was a narrow puncheon seat, the length of the table, and, like it, resting on posts driven firmly into the ground, which constituted the floor. On each side of the room were shelves resting on large pins, projecting from auger holes in the logs, and furnishing a receptacle for provisions, liquors, etc.

Against the logs at one end of the room was a thick wall about eight feet long and four in height; in front of this the kitchen fire was built, the smoke finding exit through a large hole in the roof. Two men, engaged in cooking, were scarcely able to supply the eaters who thronged the table, while the hungry crowd around waited impatiently their turn.

It was nearly noon when after weighing out in gold dust three dollars apiece, Donnelley and I, crowded together on the puncheon table seat, were furnished with a cup of coffee, a slice of fried bacon, and a piece of bread broken from a cake, which had been taken hot from before the fire; but it was all delicious beyond expression. Toward night we obtained another meal.

There were probably two hundred trying to shelter ourselves at this unfinished hotel, and it was difficult to prevent being in each other's way. The storm continued unabated, and the snow was higher than the roof of the house, so that in going out we ascended a steep hill-like bank. Considerable snow was tracked in, and, dissolving on the ground, our standing room became a pool of mud.

When night came on, and we all crowded in, it was simply impossible for all to lie down. Donnelley and I wrapped our blankets about us, and sitting on a piece of firewood which lay in the mud, slept as best we could, but, in common with others, we were greatly annoyed by several drunken men, who so disturbed the company as at times to threaten a first class tragedy.

Friday, Feb. 21. The storm continued unabated all day, and we kept closely indoor. This afternoon an intoxicated man invited me to drink with him, and I declined as politely and pleasantly as possible. But he was not satisfied, and began to insist; still refusing, I tried to move away, when he exclaimed, "Hold on, you think I'm drunk, and are ashamed to drink with me, but I'll make you do it"; and seizing a bottle, poured a quantity of liquor in two glasses that stood on the bar, pushed one toward me, and, at the same time producing a revolver, remarked, "There now, take that glass of liquor, or the contents of this pistol." He evidently meant, drink or die.

"Wait a moment," said I, "my partner can explain this."

Donnelley was called. "Here is Mr. Donnelley, my partner; we crossed the plains together. He knows whether I ever drink with any one; now, Mr. Donnelley, did you ever see me drink with any one?"

"No sir, I never did."

"Did you ever hear me give a reason for not drinking?"

"I've heard you say you were pledged against it."

Now turning to the man, who had put up his pistol, I said, "A gentleman like you would not ask anyone to break his word."

"Of course not, and here's my hand on it."

So we shook hands, and the affair was settled; but I was more than glad of being pledged against drinking.

Saturday, Feb. 22. The day was very cold, with a fierce gale occasionally tearing the clouds and letting through a ray of sunshine. This morning our host informed us that he had consulted the proprietor of the other hotel, and it was ascertained that the supply of provisions was nearly exhausted, and we would therefore be limited each to one meal a day. Before night I could not refrain the wish that the liquor might be reduced to even less than one drink a day; but however scant our ration of bread and bacon, there was plenty of whiskey, and the place became a veritable pandemonium.

In the afternoon a large German was attacked with delirium tremens, and became so violent that the men bound him hand and foot and laid him, a shrieking maniac, in one corner of the room; but I don't know as he made more noise than some who had not yet reached that stage in the drama, and were only drunk.

After dark a man came in and told us that his partner was somewhere out in the woods. Being intoxicated, they had started for Downie's Diggings on Poorman's Creek, but had lost their way, and finally one succeeded in getting back to the house.

Quite a number started out for the missing man. We divided into squads, three or four together. It was a fearful night; very cold, and a fierce gale scattered the branches, making it dangerous to be in the woods, on account of the falling limbs.

He was found by our squad in a depression in the snow, leaning against a large pine, unable to speak, his face frozen, and icicles hanging from his bare hands. Rolling him in a blanket and carrying him back, as we neared the house we were joined by Dr. Y., formerly a surgeon in the United States army, who, after feeling of his face and hands, told us to take him down to the spring, where he could be laid in a bed of earth until the frost was withdrawn.

Unfortunately, the news that he had been found preceded us, and when we stopped at the hotel for a pick and spade, the rabble came out and insisted on taking him in to the fire. We urged the necessity of following the doctor's advice, and for awhile there was a fair prospect of a fight, but when they drew their pistols we were forced to give him up, and he was taken in and laid upon a shelf near the fire. The drunken mob had its own way, but the poor man died in the morning, after a night of terrible agony.

The German afflicted with delirium, falling into a comatose condition, had been unbound, and was lying quietly on some clapboards placed on the mud floor. It was near midnight, and Donnelley and I, hoping to obtain a few hours' rest, brought in some boards, which we found piled against the house outside, placed them on the mud in a corner of the room for a bed, wrapped our blankets about us, lay down, and were soon asleep.

About that time the German aroused with a scream, and when I awoke, he was kneeling beside me in the mud and reaching across to Donnelley, who lay next the logs, had him firmly by the throat. I tried to open his hands, but his grasp was like an iron vise.

Seeing that Donnelley was choking I called for help, and some of the revelers yelled back, "Damn him, why don't you shoot him?" In a moment his hands relaxed, and rising with a bound, he ran screaming against the table, almost pushing it off the posts, but, soon overpowered, he was again bound and laid aside, and his screams gradually died away in sob-like groans.

Donnelley had been choked almost into insensibility, but as I raised his head and shoulders his breath returned. However, for several days he felt the effects of the maniac's fingers upon his throat.

Words utterly fail to picture the scene in that cabin. Above the drunken revel at times could be heard the pleadings for help of those two men. And the doctor, who, had he kept sober, might have rendered some help, became wild with drink, and after singing vulgar songs for awhile, finally quieted down into a drunken sleep. About sunrise the man who had been frozen breathed his last; the one with delirium lingered through the day, and as I afterward learned died during the following night.

Donnelley and I determined to leave the valley. Three days and nights in such uncomfortable quarters were enough for our patience, and besides, the immense depth of snow rendered mining at Downie's Diggings impossible for some time to come. Those who had claims already proved to be rich could wait in hope, but to us it seemed better to spend the time in active prospecting. Therefore, as soon as we could obtain our daily meal, which was early in the afternoon, we started for Grass Valley, said to be nine miles distant.

From Onion Valley we ascended a ridge where the snow had almost completely covered the forest, and yet, on the top of this great depth of snow, the enterprising owners of pack trains had beaten a path so that horses and mules with their loads could travel in safety.

These trains had continued to travel until the beginning of the recent storms, and were only discontinued when the severe, freezing, high winds, with added snow, made the path dangerous. But I learned later that although the storm continued for a week after we left, as soon as it abated the wind ceased and milder weather came, and the path was beaten out and pack trains again traveled over the snow.

It would be difficult to guess the average depth of snow, but Mr. Christopher R. Stark, whose home has since been near Granville, Ohio, and who that winter and the following summer was engaged in packing provisions with a mule train over that trail, informed me that a limb over which they had traveled for some time, when the snow began to settle became an obstruction and was cut off, and when the snow was gone the branch from which that limb was cut was found to be forty feet above the ground, his train passing over snow of that depth.

At Grass Valley we found an overcrowded hotel, but succeeded in obtaining supper, and passed the night in comparative comfort.

Monday, Feb. 24. This forenoon there fell a light snow. It seemed to be one of the outlying curtains of the storm which still enveloped the great heights from which we had come. We made a fair day's journey, and about night stopped at the Buck Eye ranch. We were now out of the region of snow, flowers were in bloom, the air balmy as an evening in spring, and yet only a day and a half from where winter reigns in all its rigor. A most agreeable contrast for us.

Having a desire to know how the mines had developed in the valley of the South Yuba, we returned as fast as possible, and found our former partners, Hunt, McCord, and Farley, at our cabin on Poorman's Creek. Their mine had scarcely paid expenses, but they had worked on, hoping it would improve; it, however, had paid less and less, and now that it was nearly worked out they were ready to quit.

This was a common experience all through the mines, hundreds of men worked hard, early and late, encouraged by the hope, never realized, of finding a rich deposit.

Wednesday, March 5, 1851. This morning we started in search of new mines. Donnelley, Hunt, and Farley explored the South Yuba, while McCord and I examined the gulches and creeks between the Middle and South Yubas. The weather was pleasant, and after three days diligent but fruitless search we crossed the South Yuba and followed up Deer Creek to Nevada City. Here we learned that our friends, William E. Shimmans and Henry Callanan, had gone to the Klamath mines, which had been reported very rich. John Callanan was arranging their business affairs, intending to go when he heard from his brother Henry, provided the story of the richness of the mines proved true.

Of course this was interesting to McCord and me, and we felt inclined to keep within hail of Mr. Callanan until the question of the Klamath mines was decided.

The mines around Nevada had produced an immense quantity of gold, and the business of the town had greatly extended, but just then the people were in dread of a band of roughs who had threatened to burn the city. The saloons and gambling houses had developed and sheltered a vicious class, which became so numerous and desperate, emboldened by the lack of organized government, that they greatly interfered with legitimate business, and men known to have gold or other valuables were in constant danger of being murdered and robbed.

The better element combined in self-defense, and demanded that certain known and designated criminals must leave the place within a specified time or be put to death. They left, but with the counter threat to return and burn the city. And so for some time the people had been in terror lest the threat might be carried out.

Returning to our cabin on Poorman's Creek, we found the rest of our company. Our prospecting had been unsuccessful, and we made up our minds to go to Nevada, and perhaps, ultimately, to the Klamath mines.

Tuesday, March 11. This morning, taking our effects on our shoulders, we started for Nevada. The day was very warm, and our burdens heavy, and about dark we reached the ridge which overlooks the city from the north. Here we camped, near Sugar Loaf Hill.

About midnight one of our company discovered that the city was on fire. Beginning in the valley of Deer Creek, in the southeast part of the city, the fire soon communicated to a large store. A high wind from the southeast swept the burning coals over the canvas-covered buildings, and in a short time the whole city was one mass of flame. The houses, built of wood and canvas, were soon gone, leaving a smoking mass of ruined merchandise and a large number of homeless people. The loss was estimated at about $400,000.

The fire had been kindled in a ball alley, evidently by the banished thugs, and in fulfillment of their threat. While contemplating the terrible deed, many, maddened by their losses, expressed regret that they had not been put to death while they had them within reach, thereby not only saving the city, but preventing the repetition of similar crimes against others.

The destruction of such a quantity of provisions produced something of a famine until supplies could be brought from Sacramento; but fortunately the roads were quite good, and in a few days there was a city of tents, and abundant stores, and soon the city began to rise again, with better arrangement of streets and more substantial buildings.

Chapter 5

REMOVAL TO AMERICAN RIVER

WHILE awaiting news from the Klamath we engaged in sluice washing, hiring water from the Deer Creek Water Company, which had succeeded in bringing it in a small canal from near the head of the creek onto Coyote Ridge.

Our mining arrangments were very simple. A ditch about eighteen inches wide and twelve deep, and ten rods long, was made in the ground, terminating in a long-tom and riffle-box. Into this ditch was turned a stream of water, one inch deep and five wide, under a pressure of one inch head; and for this five-inch stream of water we paid five dollars a day.

Into this we shoveled the gravel, raised from the deep mines around, which, though containing considerable gold, was not sufficiently rich to pay for hauling to the creek, but lay in vast piles of refuse. While running down the sluice and long-tom this was thoroughly washed; the gravel was shoveled away, and the sand running through and the gold being heavier, remained in the little eddies in the riffle-box.

After working thus all day, the sluice was carefully washed down and all the gold collected in the riffle-box and then "panned out;" that is, placed in a large tin or iron pan, and the remaining sand carefully washed away. Thus, after paying five dollars for water, we obtained from five to seven dollars each per day.

Wednesday, March 19. Rain fell during the entire day, and the next morning snow to the depth of eight inches covered the ground; and for two days snow, sometimes mingled with rain, continued to fall, but there was little or no frost.

Saturday, March 22. This morning the sky was cloudless. The bright sun and balmy air soon dissolved the snow, which settled quietly into the ground. We finished our sluice washing, and receiving a favorable report from the Klamath mines, prepared to go there, by way of San Francisco.

Monday, March 24. This morning Thomas Hunt, Drury Farley, Robert McCord, John Donnelley, and myself started on foot for Sacramento City. The country through which we traveled, gently undulating, with the rich foliage of trees, carpeting of grass and flowers, possessed great natural beauty; and when from a spur of the foot-hills we obtained a view of the Sacramento Valley, spreading out in a vast green meadow, it reminded us of our journey last summer along the Platte.

We spent the first night at Union Valley, and the second day at dark ferried the American River, stopping at a hotel about a mile from Sacramento City. The next morning we entered the city, where Hunt and Farley, who are half brothers, hearing of their brother, John Farley, requested us to remain while they made him a visit. Through the kindness of a relative of Mr. Hunt, Mr. Adolphus Hanna of the firm of Hanna, Jennings and White, largely proprietors of Sacramento City, we obtained a room where we could keep our effects and sleep; and thus, while living cheaply and pleasantly, have an opportunity of seeing the city and surroundings.

Our first visit was to the post office. I am quite sure that at this time there was not a post office in the mines. Letters for miners were addressed to Sacramento, and of course the mail arriving here was immense, and when we reached the office the crowd was too great for us to approach the delivery during the day.

The next morning we were there an hour before the time of opening, but the crowd seemed just as great as ever, so we retired again, and spent part of the day in visiting Sutter's Fort.

It stands about a mile from the Sacramento River, and was built many years ago by John A. Sutter, a Swiss by birth, and formerly a captain in the French army. The thick outer walls, with bastioned corners on which are places for cannon, were built of adobe (sun dried brick), inclosing a space of about twenty rods square. This outer wall, fifteen feet high, is separated twenty-five feet from an inner wall ten feet high. This space was roofed over, making a terreplein protected by a parapet. Underneath were rooms for barracks, shops, stables, etc.

Quite a pretentious frame building stood within the inclosure, said to be the former residence of Captain Sutter. The only access was by two massive gates, one on the south, the other on the east; but they needed repairs, and like the dilapidated and deserted barracks and dismounted cannon, disclosed the fact that military occupants and discipline had departed.

Saturday, March 29. Mr. Hunt returned this morning; said that he and Farley would not go with us at this time; but they, with McCord and Donnelley, wanted I should go, examine the mines, and report to them by letter at Mormon Island.

The fact that my friends Shimmans and Callanan had been there long enough to test the mines, induced me to accept the mission. However, we resolved to make one more effort to get our mail.

The condition of this post office is altogether unique. It opens at eight in the morning and closes at eight in the evening. There is a delivery window for nearly every letter of the alphabet, and at each there is a row of people, often reaching more than around the block. When so many come in person for their mail it is simply overwhelming, and when it comes time to close the office, the lines break up, each to take his chances another day. But as hope deferred makes the heart sick, so, many who came a great distance and waited long, are compelled to turn away still enduring their anxious suspense.

Recently people have adopted the plan of having their mail addressed, "By express to Nevada, Coloma," or wherever they may be. Thus the postmaster at Sacramento can send the mail by responsible express agents to the various mining towns and greatly relieve the office.

Monday, March 31. This morning about one o'clock we arrived at the post office and found a large number in waiting. The line facing the S delivery window already extended half way around the block.

Taking my place in the line, I waited until the office opened, and as the line in front melted away, moved forward. Of course each one of our little company sought the delivery according to name. This put us into different lines, and as we approached the window men came and tried to buy a place in the line, offering twenty-five and fifty dollars, and I was told that even a hundred dollars had been paid for a place near the delivery. The one who sold his place stepped from the line and went to the extreme rear, or else waited until the office closed and night had shortened the line, and again found a place. Many who were near the delivery when the office closed, remained, holding their place until it opened in the morning.

At last I reached the delivery, and the busy clerk, after looking over a vast pile of mail matter, handed out what belonged to me. Gladly I got out of the way, and hurrying to our room, scanned the familiar writing, and with a strange tremor read the first letters I had received from home and friends since leaving them more than a year before. My companions also received considerable mail, and we spent a portion of the day in answering letters; and in the afternoon they started for Mormon Island, on the south fork of the American River, about twenty-five miles from Sacramento.

Tuesday, April 1, 1851. At two in the afternoon I left Sacramento on the steamer *Wilson G. Hunt*, arriving at San Francisco early the next morning. Calling at the general shipping office, I was informed that one vessel would sail that day for Portland, Oregon, but as I was the only one who had applied for passage to Trinidad Bay, the landing place of those going to the Klamath, they were not willing it should stop there.

Having leisure I looked around the city and bay, and was greatly surprised at the number of vessels lying in the harbor, but learned that many were there because they had been abandoned by their crews, the gold mines having tempted the sailors to desert, and the officers, unable to obtain others, were compelled to remain. I was told that on the 22nd of February ships of every nation on the globe were in the harbor, and displayed their flags in connection with the United States flag in honor of Washington's birthday.

Friday, April 4. This afternoon the *Sir Charles Napier*, a large English merchant vessel from Panama, arrived at Long Wharf, bringing a large number of passengers, all in a very debilitated condition, some of whom stopped at my hotel, the Atlantic, and related a terrible story of deception, suffering, and crime.

A company in New York City advertised to take passengers from New York to San Francisco at considerably less than the rates charged by the regular steamers. Passengers were to furnish their own transportation across the Isthmus from Chagres to Panama, where ships were promised to be in readiness to carry them to San Francisco. Hundreds accepted the offer and were landed at Chagres, where they made their way across the Isthmus and waited at Panama for the ships that never came.

At last, realizing the fact that they had been deceived, and that no arrangement had been made for their conveyance farther, some obtained passage on the regular steamers to San Francisco: others, after long delay went on merchant vessels; and many died. The New York company after carrying on its deceptive work until fearing detection and arrest, canceled the contracts for the ships it had chartered, disbanded, and disappeared.

About this time the *Sir Charles Napier*, an English merchantman, came to Panama, and taking on board all the passengers that could be accommodated, sailed for San Francisco.

While on the way they were becalmed in the tropics for some sixty days.

Water and provisions failed, ship fever set in, many died, and after a voyage of over four months the ship reached San Francisco. Among those who were buried at sea were two whom I had known in Delaware County, New York; Walter Rutherford, a neighbor, and Garret McFarland, a schoolmate.

Through the incidental conversation of strangers, the well-remembered names came to my ears. "Died and were buried at sea," was all they could tell; but how well I knew them both. Rutherford, almost a giant in stature and strength, once while whetting a scythe in his field was struck by lightning, suffering for months a mental and physical collapse, but rallying, appeared strong and healthful as ever.

When a small boy, the first day of my school life, Garret and I were placed in the same class, and for several years, summer and winter, our lives lay parallel; studies and interests seemed identical. Never but once was there the least unpleasantness. Then, in a scuffle, I made his nose bleed; but perhaps it hurt me as much as it did him; and I went with him to the spring to wash away the blood. When school was called, possibly some one told the teacher that we had been quarreling, for he noticed blood on Garret's cravat, and inquired about it. "Yes," said he, "I got my nose hurt, and it bled a little." I was not blameless in the matter, but Garret was just as anxious to shield me from blame as though I had been. Brave, generous, noble-hearted boy.

Saturday, April 5. This morning two steamers arrived from the north, both stopping at Trinidad Bay, brought a large number of passengers from the Klamath mines. All with whom I conversed gave a very unfavorable account of the mines in that district.

This was discouraging; and as the regular steamer would not return to Trinidad for fifteen days, I resolved to report at once, and in person, to my company at Mormon Island, and at four in the afternoon took passage on the steamer *West Point* for Sacramento. A little after dark, while crossing the bay our boat came near being lost in a gale, which swept everything from the decks and put out the fires. After the force of the storm had passed a sail was raised, and toward morning arriving at Benicia, the boat was repaired and the fires rekindled, but it was late Sunday night when we reached Sacramento.

Being without sleep the preceding night, I went to a hotel, and slept soundly until morning; but waking, felt a strange creeping sensation on all parts of my body. An examination revealed the disgusting fact that I was infested with insects of the species *pediculis vestimenti*, or greybacks. I had heard of such things, but had never seen them before, and the experience was decidedly annoying.

However, after breakfast I went to a clothing store and bought a complete suit, including underwear, folded them in my satchel, and then started on foot for Mormon Island. In a few miles I reached the American River, where, sheltered by a grove, I undressed, and taking my clothes, stockings and all, rolled them in a bundle and sank them in about two feet of water, placing a large stone on top, and for aught I know they are there yet.

Then, after a thorough washing with sand and soap, I donned my new outfit and felt no further annoyance. I had an easy walk of twenty-five miles, and late in the afternoon I found my company camped a little above Mormon Island, on the south fork of the American River. They reported it a very rich mining district, and we were all pleased to give up the journey to the Klamath.

We learned afterward that while a few very rich discoveries were made on the Klamath

River, they were not extensive. But the transportation companies, by extensive advertising induced an immense rush to that region. It was a rich harvest for the shippers but hard on the miners, who, after spending the time and labor of exploration, and paying their passage both ways, returned to their former diggings, under all the disadvantages and losses which follow a break-up in business.

We now adopted the use of the rocker for gold washing; a machine made in various styles, but in general outline like a cradle in which babies are rocked. The part corresponding to the head has a box about five inches deep, with a sheet iron bottom perforated with half-inch holes. Into this a bucket of sand and gravel is thrown, and while water is poured over it with a dipper, the cradle is violently rocked, and when washed clean the gravel is thrown off and another bucket supplied.

On the inside, across the bottom, slats were nailed, forming ripples where the gold might settle and permit the sand and light gravel to run over. This necessitated placing the rocker at such an angle as to make the water ripple just right, so as to let the gold settle and the sand run off.

It is a slow method, but it enables a person to use water from a pond or river, where it cannot be raised so as to run into a sluice or long-tom. With the rocker each one generally worked alone, and we were enabled to wash little bars and banks, many of which were exceedingly rich. In this way we did a profitable business, sometimes collecting twenty-five or thirty dollars worth of gold in a day; but a half ounce, eight dollars, was considered a fair day's work.

Monday, April 21. Today R. McCord and I, with twelve others, organized a company for the purpose of turning about forty rods of the south fork of the American River from its channel, in order to obtain the gold from its bed.

In connection with other companies, we selected our claim about half a mile below Mormon Island, arranging to take the water of the river from a large ditch belonging to the next company above and bring it over the river bed into our ditch, and thus conduct it below our claim.

We calculated that when the water was low, from July 15 to September 15, a flume twelve feet wide and six feet deep would carry the entire river. It would require about 250 yards of flume and 275 yards of ditch, twelve feet wide at the bottom, averaging thirty feet in depth; and nearly the entire distance through solid granite. It was an expensive undertaking, but we had no doubt that there was gold enough in the river bed to pay us well, could we only get it.

Companies for turning the river and working its bed had their boundaries well defined and to each its specific name, as Iowa claim, New York claim. Ours was the Pioneer claim. There was also a definite understanding as to the joining of flumes and ditches.

The company next below ours tried to work their claim last year but failed; having raised a high dam, they were not able sufficiently to shut off the water. This year they intended to deepen their ditch, and thus lower the dam; and in accordance with this arrangement we planned the exit of our ditch.

Mr. Matthews, a shareholder, was employed as foreman to direct the work, keep the record of labor, expense, etc. Aided by seven men he was to carry on the work, and as the river would not be low enough to turn out of its bed until the latter part of July, we had some eighty days in which to complete the job. As there were fourteen shareholders, each furnished a man every other week; and as McCord and I were camped together, we worked alternate weeks on the claim. This enabled us to spend half our time in mining and still sustain our interest in the river claim.

Since enduring the fatigue, hunger, and cold last winter, my health has not been firm, and on May 21 I was prostrated with rheumatic fever, and it was not until June 18 that I was able to resume work. However, McCord kindly took my place on the river claim, and when able to do full work I returned the favor.

The conflicting interests of river, bar, bank, and gulch claim had long demanded some general rules of adjustment. For instance, it sometimes happened that a company would work a bar until the water of the river prevented their going farther; but, when the river had been turned, so as to clear the bar of water, the company would return and demand the privilege of working out their claim. So also with gulches opening to the river; while those who, at large expense, had drained the river, naturally claimed all from which they had removed the water. Also the building of dams, causing claims to be flooded.

For these and many other matters a meeting of mine owners embracing the American River and its tributaries was called to assemble at Mormon Island on Monday, July 28. While there were delegates from all parts of the district, it was really a mass convention, as every mine owner was not only entitled to speak but to vote.

The meeting lasted but a single day, and yet rules for the regulation of all mining interests were read, discussed, adopted, and registered. Many propositions were voted down, but I do not think there ever was a set of rules, which, upon trial, more perfectly bore the test than those adopted by that mass convention. Being the work of practical, earnest, upright men, they settled almost innumerable difficulties, and were recognized in the courts.

In this valley the climate, affected by local conditions, is peculiar. April 16 it rained all day, and on the 17th there were a few showers. May 7 and 17 rained all day. June 10 two slight showers, the last rain until September 5. Meanwhile vegetation dried up, and the surface of the ground became hard like brick.

During the summer months there seems to be a regular trade wind blowing up and down the river. After sunset the cool air of the mountains comes stealing down the river to take the place of the heated air of the plain; the night becomes cold and one needs a heavy wrap for comfortable sleep. This continues until after sunrise, when there is generally a calm and the temperature rises until after midday, often reaching 100 or 120 degrees in the shade, when a light breeze comes up the river, perhaps to take the place of the overheated air of the valley, but toward sunset it dies away.

To work in the sun during noonday heat is attended with great fatigue and danger of sun stroke. In the early morning, before people get to work, the water of the river is cold and clear. Then we fill our buckets and place them in the shade. To a bucket of water we add about a pint of vinegar, and drinking freely of this, perspiration is promoted, and people work with safety, even in the hot sun.

Tuesday, June 24. For some time past, I noticed a man at work with a rocker on the bank of the river. His little tent stood near my path to the Pioneer claim, just above his place of work. He was a fine-looking man, industrious, unable to speak English, and as there seemed to be no one with whom he could intelligently converse, his utter loneliness impressed me.

Business led me out of my usual path for several days, and tonight as I returned by the place the tent was gone and there was a grave where it had stood. Inquiring of those who were tented in the vicinity, I was informed that some of them had noticed a stench proceeding from the tent, and upon examination the lone man was found dead in his bed. Nothing indicating his name, friends, or country was found about him or the tent. There were no marks of violence on his person. He had evidently sickened and died alone; so, wrapped in his cot he was buried, and his tent and effects burned.

It is sad, indeed, when sickness thus overtakes the stranger, and yet in these mines many die thus neglected and alone; not that people here are unwilling to help, but because the needs of the unfortunates are not known. While there are many of the worst from all nations in California, I believe the mass of the people are equal or superior to any in the world in intelligence, benevolence, or courage. I saw this illustrated a few days since.

Two men were digging at the base of a sand bank, almost perpendicular and about one hundred feet high. Presently a large slice caved upon them, burying one completely, and the other to his shoulders. At the same time a large seam opened, extending to the top, showing that a great mass was about to fall. The one whose head was above the sand, called out, "Help here, quick."

About twenty men who were at work near by made a rush to the spot. There was not a moment's delay; each brought his shovel, and there was perfect concert of action. Not a second seemed to be lost, and the men were almost instantly released, when the great mass, like a mighty wave, swept down, brushing the feet of the hindmost. It seemed that had it fallen half a minute earlier it might have been fatal to many.

Chapter 6

A NEW PARTNERSHIP

FRIDAY, Aug. 1, 1851. All things being ready, this morning the river was turned into the flume and gliding smoothly through its new channel left in the old bed only a series of ponds. Pumps were arranged at the lower extremity, where a low dam was thrown across to prevent the river from backing up at the mouth of our ditch, but it was not until noon the next day that we were ready to begin gold washing; and then a few buckets of gravel from the bed of the river, washed in a rocker, as a prospect, yielded over three hundred dollars worth of gold.

Elated with the prospect and hopeful that the reward of our labors was about to be realized, we went cheerfully to dinner. But on returning we found the water like a placid lake, filling the channel, and our rocker, and such things as would float, on the surface; while crowbars, picks, etc., rested on the bottom.

The company below, finding the rock through which they had tried to cut their ditch very hard, had given up the task and again raised their dam. Reminding them of our mutual understanding, when, in April, we began work, they acknowledged their promise, but claimed that it would be very expensive cutting to such a depth through the flint-like rock; and besides, according to the rules made at the miner's convention, they had the right to raise the dam one more year.

Part of our company proposed to take up the flume and store it until next summer, and then set it up again. Others argued that we would not only incur the delay and the work of taking up and replacing the flume, but that another year we would not have the advantage of the ditch from which to receive the water into our flume, and consequently must build an extensive dam. These proposed an appeal to the law in order to compel the removal of the dam which flooded our claim; and, being a majority, their plan was adopted.

Believing that the miner's rule permitting the raising of the dam would be recognized in court, I remarked, "Anyone can have my interest, who will pay me fair wages for my work." The offer was immediately taken by one of the company, who weighed out the gold, and my connection with the Pioneer claim ended.

It was fortunate for me, for after an expensive litigation the miner's rule was recognized, and work on the Pioneer had to be abandoned for the time; and the next year there were difficulties about raising the water so as to run it into the flume, and I never knew when the claim was worked.

Wednesday, Aug. 6. This morning while making an excavation on the bank of the river, my right hand was quite severely injured. However, coming back the next day with a rocker, I took out an ounce of gold (sixteen dollars) but my bruised hand became so painful I concluded to let it rest a few days.

Thursday, Aug. 28. On the ninth instant rheumatic fever again set in, and has troubled me occasionally ever since. But while not able to do much mining, I have made quite a thorough exploration of this region.

On either side of the river, along the foot hills, or terminating ridges of the Sierra Nevada, the soil is, no doubt, rich, though now barren, creviced, and dry. It only lacks rain to make it productive; and some of the ravines are rich in gold, but cannot be worked successfully for lack of water.

Today, while among the rolling hills on the Sacramento and Coloma road, I found a native Californian (Spaniard) vainly trying to manage a large herd of beef cattle from the coast region, intended for the mines.

For some cause he had been detained, and his herdsmen finding a saloon by the roadside, had stopped to await his coming, and when he arrived were all too drunk to render him any assistance; and the cattle, in search of water and grass, had scattered among the hills.

In broken English he told me his difficulty. Knowing of a marsh where the grass was still green, I mounted one of his herdsmen's horses and assisted him to collect and drive his cattle to it. It was two or three miles from the road, but as grass and water were abundant and the country around utterly devoid of vegetation, he could safely leave his stock and spend the night at the Rolling Hills hotel.

He overwhelmed me with thanks, and when I refused pay for the few hours' service, he insisted on taking my name, saying his name was Jesus Chico, in English Jesus Little. He invited me, if I ever visited Santa Clara, to do him the favor of staying at his house. He was the first man I ever saw who was called Jesus, and the application of the name impressed me; afterward, through his acquaintance, I became familiar with the Spanish language, which somewhat shaped the tenor of my life.

Wednesday, Sept. 3, 1851. The state election was held today. California was admitted into the Union as a state on September 9, 1850, and though not yet a year old, great party spirit has been developed. In this locality there are four tickets, Whig, Democrat, Independent, and Miners and Settlers. Still in my teens and not yet old enough to vote, I could only look on as an interested spectator.

My health has so improved that tomorrow I expect to begin work in the bed of the river for the New York company. However, my illness has not compelled an entire loss of time; besides various explorations, I have read Mrs. Sigourney's *Oriana*, and *The Legend of Oxford*, Milton's *Paradise Lost*, Abbott's *Young Christian*, and Dana's *Two Years Before the Mast;* all very entertaining books.

Friday, Sept. 12. Since the sixth R. McCord has been very sick of fever. Leaving my work, I called a physician and devoted myself night and day to his care. He had been delirious until this morning he passed the crisis, his mind became clear, and though weak there are evidences of returning health.

Some time ago I made an arrangement with an express company to have my mail taken to, and brought from the post office at

Sacramento, and today I was delighted to receive two letters; one from sister Loretta, the other from brother Edward. Bringing good news from a far country, they were indeed as cold water to a thirsty soul. By these letters I learned that an uncle, John Steele, after whom I was named, and who with his brother William left their home in Delaware County, New York, fifteen years ago, spending ten years in Georgia, from whence they removed to Green County, Missouri, where William died; and in 1850, Uncle John crossed the plains and was now in the vicinity of Coloma, scarcely twenty miles distant.

Sending a letter addressed to him at Coloma, I hopefully watched the express messenger for a reply. Within a week McCord had sufficiently recovered to be left alone. I had resumed work, when on Saturday, September 20, while attending a miner's trial as a witness, my uncle, having received my letter, came to visit me. Someone pointed me out, and he advanced and took me by the hand. I had not seen him since I was four years old, but I felt less lonesome when he told me who he was. While it is true that "there is a friend that sticketh closer than a brother," it is also true that the clannish spirit is natural, and however kindly others may regard us, the heart has a craving for kindred. It was pleasant to recall the various members of the family and speak of the old and young, from whom we seemed so far.

Monday, Sept. 22. Uncle John Steele and I made a journey to Coloma. Captain Sutter's saw-mill stood silent and deserted; the bar, through which the race was dug in which gold was first discovered by Mr. James Marshall in January, 1848, had not been molested, but the dam had been cut through, and the river bed and banks for some distance above were filled with busy miners.

Half a mile below Coloma the river curves around a long spur of the mountain; beneath this a tunnel, half a mile long, had been cut, and the south fork of the American River turned through, leaving the bed for a mile and a half quite dry. But the river bed was not as rich as anticipated, and I was informed that the company lost about forty thousand dollars in the enterprise.

Tuesday, Sept. 23. This is my first anniversary of entering the gold mines, and I am thankful that through sickness and suffering my life has been spared.

Today I made the acquaintance of Mr. Peter F. Clark, a young man from Missouri, and friend of my uncle. Together we visited many of the mining operations along the river, and finally I concluded to join with

Clark and my uncle in opening a placer mine on Snyder's Bar, about three miles below Coloma.

Returning to Mormon Island the next day, I crossed the river at Kanaka Bar, so named because it was occupied by several families of Sandwich Islanders and English sailors who had married Kanaka women. Ascending the mountain on the south side, although the sky was cloudless and the day warm I had a very pleasant walk in the shadow of the great pines. When opposite Salmon Falls, again descending into the valley, I recrossed the river and followed down its margin to Mormon Island. Found McCord much improved in health; arranged my affairs, and on the last of September returned to Snyder's Bar.

Wednesday, Oct. 1, 1851. This morning my uncle, P. F. Clark, and I set up a long-tom and commenced mining on the Bar; but not being certain that it would pay, we built no cabin; did not even pitch a tent; simply fixed our camp under the shelter of some trees, a common mode of life here in summer.

For several days the weather was fine, and out-door life very pleasant; but warned by some light showers that the rainy season was at hand, as our claim was paying pretty well, on the twelfth we brought our tents and set them up, making a very comfortable dwelling. While here, we were relieved from the task of bread-making, a baker and butcher bringing bread and meat daily to the camps along the river, and as our mining was profitable we greatly enjoyed our stay on Snyder's Bar.

Wednesday, Oct. 21. George Scott, a young man, tented at the lower end of the Bar, being intoxicated for some time, today failed to appear; so in the afternoon my uncle went to his tent and found him suffering with delirium tremens. He seemed intelligent, was fairly educated, and had but recently acquired the drink habit. After taking quite a fortune from the mines, while intoxicated he gambled it away, and of course when his money was gone his companions deserted him.

We gave him some hot coffee and toast, and Clark and I watched with him during the night. Toward midnight his mind became clear; he was very weak, and for awhile seemed to be dying. Giving him a little more strong coffee, at last he sunk into a quiet sleep. This refreshed him somewhat and for breakfast he took some more hot toast and coffee, but could not rid himself of the impression that snakes were crawling over him, and that devils were peering into the tent, ready to carry him away; and he pled with us so piteously not to leave him alone that we took him to our tent and my uncle remained with him.

Why is it that when people are reduced by drunkenness and debauchery they feel snakes, and see devils? Are these their actual associates? And are they only discerned when the veil of flesh is ready to fall away? And how often when the pure in heart and life are brought low, they hear sweet music, and see angelic beings. Are not these their natural associations?

Scott remained with us several weeks, and so regained his health that he did good work; but he became restless, and in spite of our efforts to persuade him to remain, went to Coloma and renewed his dissipated life. The fate of George Scott has been the fate of thousands from Christian homes, who in the absence of home and church associations have been tempted and allured to their destruction by the drink habit.

Wednesday, Nov. 5, 1851. On the third instant I made a business trip to Mormon Island. I was glad to meet my former partners McCord and Donnelley, with whom I had a very pleasant visit, and, returning to Snyder's Bar, this morning bade them goodbye. We were more than common friends. Brothers could not have been more devoted, and we confidently expected to meet often, but changing our residence and losing each other's address, the wild currents of active life drifted us strangely apart and we never met again. Yet how often I have thought of them, and have always hoped that some happy chance might bring us together.

As the fall rains flooded the river we worked out our bar as soon as possible, and on the tenth began moving our effects to a place known as Downing's Ravine, about five miles north-east of Coloma, into a cabin built by Clark and my uncle last fall.

The ascent from the river at Coloma was steep and difficult, but the place of our residence on the mountain was delightful. An open forest of pine, burr, and live oaks, with an occasional clump of manzanita and chaparral covered the hills, and the ravines were rich in gold.

A small spring near our cabin supplied us with water for household use, and we trusted that the winter rains would furnish enough for gold washing. Here instead of granite, as along the river, the underlying rock is slate, and on this, mixed with gravel, in the bed of the ravines we found the gold.

This gravel is often cemented with a blue clay, which, taken freshly from the ground, is difficult to dissolve; like tallow, it seemed impervious to water, rolling into small balls with the particles of gold adhering, thus carrying it away in the current. However, we found that by heaping it on the bank where it could dry, it would dissolve in water like dust. Some of our best pay was from "tailings," which had been washed last winter; but then the clay had, unsuspected, gathered up the gold and carried it away. We therefore devoted our time to digging and heaping up the gravel, where it might dry and disintegrate before washing. In the latter part of November there fell some copious rains, after which there was water for mining until March, in most of the ravines.

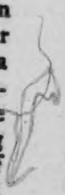
At the time of our arrival we seemed to be quite alone, but by the last of December were in the midst of a numerous population, and among our neighbors a large number from the gold mines of Georgia.

Here I noticed the work of the pinonero, a bird which picks holes in the bark of trees, generally pine, and then drives an acorn into each hole. Seeing the bark on the south side, seldom if ever on the north side of the trees, perforated with holes, nearly an inch in depth and diameter, we felt a curiosity to know what it meant; but it was all made clear when the acorns began to fall, and these birds were busy putting them into the holes.

Thus removed from the ground, the acorns would neither grow nor decay, but furnished food for these provident little workers. All through the proper season they were constantly active, either making holes or bringing acorns.

White oak and burr oak acorns are much larger and of better flavor in California than in Wisconsin, and they furnish the Indians with a large part of their food. They are often cooked and eaten with roasted grasshoppers. Not "locusts and wild honey," but grasshoppers and acorns.

About two miles from our cabin is a small village of Pah Ute Indians, known as Columbia ranch, which during the winter was involved in war with a village on the south, or opposite side of the American River near Placerville. After some weeks of indecisive warfare each village, at the same time, sent out a war party with the evident intent of surprising the other; both made a detour eastward among the mountains, and met in a valley known as Rock Creek, about four miles from the Columbia village, where a desperate battle took place, and a considerable number on either side were killed. The Columbia ranch was victorious, but among their dead was the oldest son of the chief Capitan Juan (pronounced Cap-e-tan Whan).



The Indians south of the river, trying to involve the Columbia ranch in trouble with the whites, sent over a small party which shot and killed a white man in Kelsey Cañon, near the Columbia village. But it so happened that a band of the Columbias were watching them, gave the alarm, and a party of whites pursued the murderers to their village, where the Columbia Indians pointed out the one who fired the fatal shot. He was promptly arrested, but I believe for lack of proper evidence was not executed. However, his village was greatly frightened, and fear of the whites virtually ended the war.

Chapter 7

AN EXCURSION TO LOS ANGELES

EARLY in the spring Peter F. Clark and my uncle returned to their homes in Missouri, but wishing to see more of the country, I worked in the ravines until the water dried up, and then made a trip to Martinez, at the head of San Francisco Bay, bought a horse and started out to explore the coast region.

My route lay between the Coast Range and the Pacific Ocean, and it was my intention to go as far south as Monterey, of which place I had read in Dana's *Two Years Before the Mast.* It was early in April; the rainy season was over; and the country was clothed in its greatest beauty.

Mount Diablo, the highest peak in the Coast Range, was on my left, and as I crossed each spur new scenes of grandeur and beauty came into view. The weather was all that could be desired; my lonely ride led through enchanted grounds, and it seemed that all I lacked was companionship to make the enjoyment perfect. If Clark and my uncle had been with me, or McCord and Donnelley, or better than all, my brothers and sister, what a delightful journey it would have been!

But the balmy air, bright sun, and every new charm of landscape only added to my feeling of loneliness until I seemed to realize the force of the aphorism,

> "The friendless owner of the world is poor."

Fortunately I found an American family with whom I stopped the first night, and late in the afternoon of the next day called at a large adobe residence to inquire as to the possibility of finding a hotel, or English speaking family, or even the trail to Santa Clara. While trying to make myself understood by a young Spaniard, who met me at the gate, a middle-aged gentleman approached saying, "Meester Steele please, not will travel more today."

The voice and countenance seemed familiar, and strangely enough he recognized me as the one who came to his relief when his herdsmen were drunk and his cattle were about to leave him at Rolling Hills on the Coloma road.

Leaving my horse in charge of the young man, Señor Don Jesus Chico very politely led me through a large gate into an open court, surrounded by a veranda, into a large room furnished with upholstered lounge and chairs, two small tables, and on the walls a variety of pictures. Here I was introduced to his family, consisting of Mrs. Chico, their two daughters, Guadalupe and Jesucita, and their son, Hernando. They were all very polite and kind, but only the father was able to converse in English, and his words and sentences were very broken. Now I felt the need of a knowledge of the Spanish language, and resolved to devote my time while in that region to its study and practice.

Señor Chico informed me that his son Hernando and a number of herdsmen were about to go south on a business trip, and they would wait until I was rested and I could go with them and see the country. It was just the opportunity I wanted, so I told him it would suit my convenience to start with his son in the morning, and at the time of my return he might expect me to converse with him in Spanish, and his son to join with us in talking English.

But he insisted that I should remain at least one day, and, pleased with my desire to learn Spanish, at once became my teacher, and soon put me in possession of quite a stock of Spanish words and phrases. In the evening the daughters sang several Spanish songs, accompanied with the guitar, and insisted that I should sing something in English. I therefore sang a little ditty, named Hope.

> "She comes our path to lighten,
> To twine the diamond band:
> Uniting earth and heaven;
> That happy spirit land." &c.

The next day was devoted to talk for Señor Chico, or Mr. Little, as he liked to be addressed among his Spanish neighbors, and his son desired to hear me converse in English, and I was just as well pleased to follow them in pronouncing Spanish. In the meantime we visited the neighboring ranches and the hamlet of Santa Clara, where I purchased a Spanish and English primer to assist in conversation with the people.

Wednesday, April 7, 1852. This morning Don Chico proposed that I take one of his horses and leave mine to rest, but his kind offer was thankfully declined, and about nine in the forenoon our horses were ready. With a prayer that I might be under the protection of God and enjoy the journey, and an earnest invitation to return to their house, they bade me good-bye, and I stepped to my horse, ready to mount. Hernando, kneeling before his father received his blessing; then after embracing his mother and sisters, mounted his horse, and with an affectionate *Adios*, we rode away.

Native Californians are noted for their fast riding. Hernando was no exception, and soon we were out of sight of the Chico residence, but for some time neither was able to break the silence, and engage in conversation. So many things we wanted to talk about, but because we spoke different languages our lips were sealed. The silence was oppressive. At last I thought of my primer, and found, in Spanish and English, the question, What do you call this?—*¿Como se llama este?*

This was the key that unlocked our lips, and though sometimes it seemed like a vain repetition, our conversation never again lagged. Before noon I had learned from him that four herdsmen had started early, and we would overtake them at the foot of a hill, by a spring among the trees; and he repeated the information to me, or rather after me, in English.

On many of the slopes there were large oak trees, which, instead of growing upright, curved to the incline of the hillside, so that though they were fifty or sixty feet in length, a person on horseback could touch the topmost bough. At noon we descended into a ravine among large oak trees, and there at the spring we found the four herdsmen vaqueros. Having kindled a fire, they were preparing dinner, which consisted of bread made thin like pancakes, and then rolled up; cold boiled beans, well seasoned with red pepper, dried beef, and strong, hot coffee. They also had wine, which they greatly praised, and seemed surprised because I refused to drink it. I learned afterward that my refusal made them doubt my being an American.

For nearly two weeks we traveled through a most beautiful country. The houses were in clusters, and around them were many fine orchards and vineyards. Sometimes we passed through valleys which swarmed with cattle, and for two days Hernando and I, leaving the herdsmen, rode out of our direct route to obtain views of notable cliffs, cañons, and of the sea. At two points we rode out upon cliffs which seemed to overhang the sea, where we could feel the rock tremble as the strong Pacific tide came rolling in.

Following up the Salinas River, we entered upon a mountainous region of wonderful beauty, and finally descended to *La Ciudad de los Angeles* (The city of the Angels). About a mile north of the city we stopped with the family of Hernando's uncle named Jimnes. Here we remained two days to let our horses rest, and I was glad of the opportunity, being almost tired out with the long ride. Owing to fatigue some objects of interest were not visited; but at the Jimnes home the orchards, vineyards, and flowers, with the delightful climate, impressed one with the idea that here was the veritable Garden of Eden.

Leaving Los Angeles, we traveled nearly due north, and the first day passed beyond the settlements. Some parts of the country had a desert appearance, and the distance was long between watering places. Heretofore we had stopped at a house for the night and had always been cordially received, but most of the way on our return journey we lived in camp and slept on the ground under the sheltering branches of trees; but the ground was dry, the air pleasant, and the stars looked brightly down from a clear sky.

At last we struck the headwaters of Cuyama Creek, followed down it half a day's journey, and then through the uplands on the right. Here the herdsmen spent several days in collecting a herd of beef cattle. When a few were brought together, they were driven into a small valley, where there was plenty of grass and water. Here they were guarded until more were gathered, and then all were driven a good day's journey to some other place abounding in grass and water, where, being tired, they would remain very quietly. But just as soon as they were rested or became uneasy they were started again. Thus cattle were sometimes driven around in the same locality, simply to keep them from straying.

These cattle when first approached were generally very wild, and would sometimes scatter in all directions; but, unless chased, they would soon come together again. If hemmed in, they would turn and fight, and then were exceedingly dangerous, it requiring great skill and presence of mind in managing a horse when attacked. However, our herdsmen understood all about it, and would so drop their riatas as to entangle and tame the most furious. And after an animal had been overthrown a few times, when approached by a horseman he would generally stop and shake his head as if expecting to be caught.

When the herd, which numbered over three hundred, had been collected and branded the journey was resumed; and driving them before us, we descended into the valley of the Salinas, following down until we struck the trail by which we first came to the river. As the herd was now accustomed to be driven, and tired enough not to wander nights, Hernando and I went on in advance, leaving the herdsmen to bring the cattle.

In that early day, when there were no fences, each animal in the ranchero's herd, horse, cattle, or sheep, was known by its brand, and it was the duty of his herdsmen to see that all the young stock were branded; and anyone finding an animal of two years or older without a brand had the right to keep it.

Of course, unbranded stock were strays that had left the ranches when young. They were generally found in the mountain region and were known as *ganados silvestres* (wild cattle), or simply *silvestres* (wild ones). It was these that Hernando and his herdsmen were in search of, and as fast as captured they were branded, driven to his father's ranch, and ultimately to the mines and sold for beef.

On this trip I learned that the average California horse understood the movements and methods of the chase about as well as his rider. It was interesting to see him dodge the horns of a furious steer; how quick to notice when the riata caught an animal, and place himself in a position to receive the strain when it tightened on the pommel of the saddle with a shock that would often throw the steer headlong. Such exercise was very exhilarating, and with just enough danger to make it attractive. My horse was an American, a dark chestnut Morgan; of fair, but not extra speed, spirited, but entirely unacquainted with the maneuvers of the herdsman; and therefore, several times I found myself at a disadvantage, and in dangerous positions, and appreciated, as at first I could not, the kindness of Señor Don Chico in offering me a well drilled horse.

On the third day after leaving the herd we reached the Chico residence and were welcomed by Señora Chico with "*Mil gracios a Dios por su venida sin dano*" (A thousand thanks to God for your safe return). The greeting of all was so cordial that they made me seem like one of the family. And although it was scarcely a month since I began the study and practice of the Spanish tongue, I found myself able, with an occasional help from the primer, to converse quite intelligently. In the meantime Hernando was making good progress in the practice of English. I could hardly call it a study. But with me, I heard nothing but Spanish, only when my own words were echoed back by Hernando. Evidently the best method of learning to speak a foreign tongue is to hear, talk, and think in no other.

It was my intention to return at once to the mines, but Hernando insisted that my horse should rest a few days while with another I accompanied him on various excursions in the neighborhood, which he had planned. Sometimes his sisters, Guadalupe and Jesucita, rode with us, and while they were polite and reserved towards me, they were ready to hear and quick to understand and reply in all seriousness to my conversation, yet, I felt sure, they were often merry, when by themselves, over my lame efforts to form sentences and pronounce words in Castilian.

In thus traveling with Hernando I saw many of the native Californians, visited their homes, observed their business methods, and was impressed with their lives of contentment and leisure. No one seemed to be in a hurry except when on horseback, and then they almost invariably moved at a sweeping gallop. But there was time to talk, and rest, and wait.

In business affairs they seemed to have adopted the maxim, "Never do today what can be put off until tomorrow." Around these quiet homes and drowsy hamlets there was the greatest possible contrast with the promptness, struggle, and rush at the mines, where people could hardly find time to eat, rest, or sleep; these Californians scarcely found time for anything else.

All classes seemed at home in the saddle; in fact it might be said of many that they spent their active life on horseback. The little babe when eight days old, is taken by the *padrinos* (godfather and godmother) on horseback to the priest, when it is christened; and afterward, nearly every day the child is carried somewhere on horseback, so that each one's earliest recollection is associated with the horse.

I believe that the native Californians (Spanish) were all devout members of the Roman Catholic church; they paid special attention to its ceremonials and reverenced the priesthood; but priests and people were addicted to drinking wine, made from the native grape, and a kind of brandy made from fruit; and drunkenness was sadly prevalent among all classes. Another unfortunate habit was that of gambling, in a great variety of forms, and the strange thing about it was that none seemed to consider either drunkenness or gambling a vice.

No people could be more kind or hospitable. Politeness seemed natural. They never passed each other with indifference; and if one was about to shoot you he would probably first give you a most polite salutation.

For many years stock-raising had been about the only industry in this country; hence, the almost constant use of the horse. A few years ago, ships from the United States and other countries came around

Cape Horn to this coast for hides and tallow. In those days the flesh, having no commercial value, was thrown away. Since the discovery of gold, and the mines afforded a market, the meat only is salable, the hides and tallow being thrown away. This was in 1852, when cattle were slaughtered in the mines, and freights were too high to admit of the transportation of hides, tallow, and such things to the sea coast.

Thursday, May 6, 1852. This morning I said *Adios* to the Chico family. At parting Señor Chico laying his hand upon my head solemnly invoked the Divine blessing, and that God would keep me in all my ways. Hernando traveled with me until near noon, when we took an affectionate leave of each other, tears filling his eyes as he said "Goodbye, and God be with you." Among the pleasantest memories of my life is my tour through the Spanish settlements of California, and my association with the Chico family.

At Martinez, selling my horse to the same man from whom I had bought it, I boarded a steamboat for Sacramento, where I purchased Ollendorff's new method of learning Spanish, also a reader and dictionary to assist in a proper study of that tongue, and taking the stage for Coloma, sixty-four miles distant, in due time arrived at my cabin in Downing's Ravine.

I now learned, what before I had not even suspected, that many of the Indians were familiar with the Spanish language. Widely dispersed throughout the country were those who a few years ago were in the employ of Captain John A. Sutter; some as laborers, and many others as drilled and disciplined soldiers at his fort. The change in the government, the inflow of immigration, and the building of Sacramento City had broken up the old order and dispersed the soldiers and laborers, and while they still retained their native dialect, the Spanish language in which they had been trained was not forgotten.

On reaching Downing's Ravine and learning that smallpox was prevalent among the miners, fearing exposure and attack, I immediately returned to Sacramento for the purpose of being vaccinated, and remained until it became effective.

On my return, meeting with Captain Juan, chief of the Columbia village, he told me in Spanish, with which I found that most of them were familiar, that one of his people had died of smallpox, and others were sick. Explaining how a person, by vaccination, could escape, I showed him my arm, telling him I had no fear, for after a person was vaccinated smallpox would not make him very sick, and taking some of the virus from my arm, I vaccinated the chief and his son, who happened to be with him.

Having in my cabin a hawk's wing, I took a quill, and filling it with the virus from my arm, went with him to the village and vaccinated quite a number, showed them how, and advised them to vaccinate every one, old and young.

These Indians burn their dead. A pile, usually of dry manzanita about six feet long, three high, and three wide, is prepared and the body, neatly rolled in a blanket or other clothing, is laid thereon. Fire is then applied. The people form a circle around it, and led by a master of ceremonies, engage in a mournful chant, or dirge.

Respect for the dead is indicated by the value of the offerings placed on the fire. When the body is reduced to a cinder, it is taken out of the fire, folded in a cloth, and sometimes wrapped with strings of beads. When it has been properly prepared by the leader, it is passed from hand to hand around the circle and each one upon its reception, turning away from the fire and holding it up at arm's length, says reverently, "To Thee O God."

When it has gone around the circle the embers and coals are raked together and the master of ceremonies again commits it to the fire; and when it has been burned to ashes they are taken up and the nearest relatives use them to paint black lines upon their faces. These are the emblems of mourning, and the form in which the paint is put on indicates the relationship of the mourner to the deceased.

Aware that the entire village would soon feel the effects of the vaccination, and fearful that they might think that I intended to kill them all, it seemed to me prudent to keep out of their way for awhile. So in company with John Ford, a young man from Georgia, I made a trip to San Andres, exploring the Mokelumne, Calaveras, and Stanislaus rivers.

In California the different nationalities did not always harmonize. Those of different speech, not being able to understand each other, sometimes had serious quarrels.

Such we found to be the condition at the mining town of Mokelumne Hill. Reaching the place about dark, after supper we walked through the village to converse with the miners who had come in from their work. Passing into a large store, which seemed thronged, we were addressed in Spanish, to which I replied in the same tongue. Mr. Ford made some inquiry in English, when I heard some one exclaim with an oath, "*¡Es Americano, matele! ¡matele!* (He is an American, kill him! kill him!).

At first I doubted my understanding of the words; but when a knife was flourished, and a rush made at Ford, knowing there was no mistake, I grasped the arm which held the knife, as it came down; and yet, in trying to parry the blow, Ford had his right hand severely cut. With a bound we were out of the store, and utterly bewildered at the unprovoked attack, lost no time in reaching our hotel.

The landlord informed us that for some time a bitter feud about some mining claims had existed between the Spanish and the English speaking people; that they lived in separate parts of the town; and this afternoon there had been a collision, several shots had been fired, and probably some one had been killed. In our ignorance of the conditions we had wandered over into the Spanish end of the town, and hence the clash. Ford's wound was dressed, and early the next morning we left the warlike camp.

At San Andres I found the solution of a puzzle which had been presented in Downing's Ravine.

One night shortly before starting south one of my neighbors, a gentleman from Georgia, brought to my cabin a fine looking man, whom he introduced as Colonel Davis, brother of the senator from Mississippi, who was making the tour of California, and would like to stop with me in my cabin a few days.

It was not often that I was honored with a guest possessing such distinguished affiliations, and I therefore did my best to make his stay pleasant. Telling him of my plan to visit some of the southern mines, I expressed the thought that if he had not already been there, we might go together as far as Jackson or San Andres.

"Have you friends there?" he inquired. I thought I had, if I could only find them. In fact I found two at Volcano, James and William S. Hanford of Walton, New York.

The next morning I apologized for our plain fare, but we hoped to have something better for dinner, and he said I might expect him precisely at noon. Noon came, dinner was ready, but the Colonel failed to appear, and I never saw him again; nor could I find anyone who had seen him after he left my cabin.

My Georgia neighbor who introduced him knew not where he had gone. I was greatly puzzled, and feared that his friends might suspect me of being his murderer. But after reaching San Andres the mystery was cleared up. A man named Davis, answering exactly to the Colonel's description, had lived at San Andres, but whether really any relation to Senator Jefferson Davis might be doubted, although there was a resemblance in person and features.

While under the influence of liquor he went into a barber shop kept by a negro, whose family occupied part of the same house. Going into the family room he insulted the barber's wife, and was ordered out. Not being inclined to go, the barber came to protect his wife, and very properly demanded, "Leave here, Sir, or I'll kick you out." The so-called Colonel deliberately turned to him and said, "No *white* man ever talked that way to me and lived"; and, presenting a pistol, shot the barber dead in the presence of his family.

The murderer, pursued by the indignant citizens, tried to make his escape, but in crossing a ravine filled with washings from the mines above, he sunk in the mire and was captured. He was neither shot, hanged, nor burned; but was handed over to the sheriff of Amador County and lodged in the jail at Jackson.

Of course there was great indignation against the murderer, and a few nights after his arrest a crowd appeared before the jail and demanded the prisoner. The sheriff, supposing they intended to kill him, made the jail as secure as possible, and tried to persuade them to let the law take its course.

In the meantime another small party came, privately assuring the sheriff that it would be impossible to keep the mob out and that the only way to save the prisoner and honor the law was to place him quietly in their hands, permitting them, without the knowledge of anyone in or about the jail, to remove him to another place, and after the mob had searched in vain, of course the sheriff would be honored for the wisdom of his strategy.

The plan was adopted, the prisoner delivered up, and under cover of the night conveyed to a place of safety. After a little more parley, the sheriff informed the mob that the prisoner had been removed and was entirely beyond their reach, and to verify his words invited them to come in and search the jail. Not finding him, they concluded that the sheriff was the right man in the right place, and the public interests were safe in his hands.

But the sheriff never again saw his prisoner, he having been placed in the hands of his friends and associates, who not only wanted to get him away from the mob, but out of the hands of the sheriff, and they succeeded. Just how the sheriff settled with the county I am not certain, but I was told that he claimed his prisoner was finally taken by a mob, and whether put to death he did not know.

He was evidently the same man who stopped with me in Downing's Ravine, and his friend, my Georgian neighbor, was helping him to escape justice. No wonder he became alarmed and skipped out at the mention of San Andres. Truly, "The wicked flee, when no man pursueth."

About this time a Mexican named Joaquin, a notorious desperado and leader of a gang, who, by murder and robbery, were a terror to the country, had been traced to the neighborhood of San Andres. One evening, while at supper in a hotel, he, being unknown to any about the place, seated himself at the supper table. Back of him was an open window, and some twenty feet below was a water ditch probably ten feet wide, and on the opposite side were piles of broken rock. He faced the door and windows, which opened upon the street, and as I sat nearly opposite to him at the table, my back was towards the door. He was a fine looking man and I had no idea who he was, but judged from his appearance that he was a Mexican, and wishing to improve every opportunity to practice my newly acquired Spanish, I gave him the usual salutation, "*¿Como le va, Señor?*" (How do you do, Sir?").

"*Muy bien, ¿De donde V.?*" (Very well, where are you from?).

"*Del norte, cerca de Coloma*" (From the north, near Coloma).

As neither he nor any of his gang had operated in that region, he was evidently sure that I had no suspicion as to who he was, and so the conversation ran on.

Suddenly he arose, turned to the window, and as several shots were fired, sprang out. Whether he was hit I do not know, but it was a desperate jump across the ditch upon those rocks; and although it was hardly dark, he disappeared in a large growth of chaparral just beyond and made his escape. The sheriff's posse had surrounded the house except on that side, not thinking it possible that anyone could pass in safety from that window.

Seated with my back toward the entrance, I had not seen the attacking party; but there were those who had observed me in conversation with Joaquin, and under suspicion, I was held until the pursuers returned, and then put through a rigid examination.

Mr. Ford explained whence, how, and when I came to San Andres; but his wounded hand excited distrust, and for awhile both of us were in serious danger; not from the sheriff and his posse, who were satisfied with our innocence, but from the unreasoning crowd, insisting that we belonged to Joaquin's gang and, of course, ought to be lynched. I am sure that one who has never faced such a condition can have no idea of the situation. However, we were both young; certainly not hardened criminals; and as I could refer to well known men in Coloma and Sacramento, we were at last entirely relieved from suspicion.

A large reward was offered for the capture of Joaquin, dead or alive, and a year or two after this he was killed by a sheriff in trying to effect his arrest.

Chapter 8

SPANISH FLAT AND TEXAS BAR

TWO weeks from my departure south I returned to my cabin, and was surprised to find myself regarded by the Columbia Indians as a great medicine man. Most of those taken with smallpox had died, but after vaccination there were no new cases; and it was, no doubt, well for them that they burned their dead; thus, with them, consuming their infected clothing.

The Chief, Capitan Juan, accompanied by his son and the principal men of the village, made me a formal visit, thanking me for the benefits conferred in vaccinating them, and asking whether there was anything they could do for me. In reply I told them it was my wish that we might be friends, and that they would treat me as a brother.

The Chief carried a beautiful cedar bow, along the convex side of which, as neatly as the bark on a hickory sapling, was fastened the sinew from a deer's leg. He had also twenty-five feathered and flint-pointed arrows in a quiver resembling a fox skin, only the hair was black.

After an examination I inquired, "Would you sell them?" He said, "No, I will give them to you." Then calling the attention of those present, he said, "*Este arco, estas flechas con esta piel de jau, pertenece a mi joven hermano blanco.*" (This bow, these arrows, with this fox skin, belong to my young white brother) and rising up he placed them in my hands.

I was greatly pleased with the gift, and with sincere thanks assured him that they would always remind me of Captain Juan and his people. I kept them with greatest care, and when on my way to New York had them in a neat box, but while going down the San Juan River in Central America they were stolen from the boat.

Among the first with whom I became acquainted in the vicinity of Downing's Ravine, was Elijah Barker, a colored man about forty years old, a slave, whose owner, James Barker, had brought him from Georgia. Peter F. Clark and my uncle had known him nearly a year longer than I, and spoke of him as an excellent Christian man.

His master, generally known as "Jeems" Barker, had the reputation of being unsteady. After reaching the mines he was soon out of money, but Elijah was hired out, and when he had earned enough money "Jeems" concluded to go back to Georgia where expenses would be less. He would have taken Elijah with him but for lack of means. However, Elijah was at work, and doubtless when some of "Jeems'" Georgia neighbors were ready to return, he would have earned enough to pay his fare and might go with them.

But he discovered a mine, and working on his own account, was soon in possession of considerable gold. Very industrious, he worked in his mine during the day and often in the evenings washed clothes for the miners.

My uncle had read to him the letters sent by his master, answered them, and assisted him in business matters; and after he left, Elijah came to me for such help, and so by reading and writing his letters and assisting in his business, I became familiar with all his affairs. He was intelligent and sociable, and related many incidents, some humorous, others exceedingly sad, all of which gave me an inside view of slavery.

Slaves took the surname of their master, and he, by being sold, had his name changed three times, and finally, being given as a dower to James Barker's wife, took the name of Barker. He was married and had two children, but his wife belonged to a man named Grove. He often spoke of them, and always sent them an affectionate message in the letters addressed to his master.

He was much worried, fearing the Grove estate might be sold, in which event he might never see his wife and children again, and sometimes when expressing these fears he would break down and weep bitterly.

Of course I was interested. Grove had come to California, and learning that he wanted to sell his slaves and bring his family, I suggested to Elijah that he buy his wife and children and have them come with Grove's family to California, where they would not only all be together, but free, because slavery was not recognized in California.

He replied, "Yes, Massa John, Ize thought 'bout dat; but it can't be done." And then he sobbed as though his heart would break.

"O, yes," said I, "I'll transact the business for you, and you need not pay a cent until they are here; and if you lack means I'll make it up, and trust you to make it good." Still he objected, but always, when we met, the conversation turned upon that subject.

At last a letter came from his master, requesting Elijah to return with certain Georgians who were about to leave California.

When they were ready to start, he came to bid me good-bye; and I made my final appeal, urging him to rescue his wife and children, and showing how happy they could all live together in California. It was evidently his greatest desire; but instead of acquiescence he utterly broke down and wept for a long time. At last, with a great effort, overcoming his emotion, he wiped away his tears and rising up, said with deep solemnity, "Massa John, de Lord heard me promise Massa Jeems dat I'd come back, an ob cose I will."

Nothing could tempt him to break his word. From that time he seemed to me like one of the old saints or martyrs. All his life a slave, and yet so near to God. As surely as that the fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom he was wise. In the presence of such faithfulness I felt humbled.

With an earnest prayer for my salvation, prosperity, and happiness, bidding me good-bye he started for Georgia and slavery. But he died on the way; Massa Jeems obtained his earnings, and his wife and children were sold with the Grove estate; and yet, it is possible that they are all together in a better home than all the wealth of California could furnish.

In the early history of the mines a company of Mexicans occupied a prairie-like slope about three miles from my cabin.

They were joined by some native Californians and Chilenos, and, as they all spoke Spanish, the place was known as Spanish Flat. Westward about a mile through dense pines was a similar place, occupied by a company of American miners, and hence, called the American Flat.

About one hundred Chilenos arrived in San Francisco, and coming out to the mines, very naturally came to those who spoke their own tongue; and so, in the latter part of June, 1852, Spanish Flat became quite populous.

One Sunday, when the American company, only five or six in number, were away, some persons claiming ownership sold the American mine to the newly arrived Chilenos, and receiving the price, a considerable sum, left before the fraud was discovered and they identified. Having bought not only the mine, but the mining implements, the Chilenos immediately began work, and when Messrs. Burt and Grove, the real owners, returned on Monday morning they found that their claim had been "jumped." Probably a hundred men were in possession, and ready to hold it by force of arms; and as they spoke different languages, explanation was impossible.

Messengers were sent to the nearest mining camps, asking the men to bring their rifles and other weapons, and to assemble on the ridge above the American Flat. At that time, June 7, 1852, most of the miners had left the uplands for the rivers; and by three in the afternoon, rifle in hand, I reached the rendezvous, where only some forty had assembled.

A man named Murphy explained the affair as he understood it. He knew nothing of the sale, but stated in effect that probably one hundred or more Chilenos on Sunday had taken forcible possession of Messrs. Burt and Grove's claim and tools, and refusing to give them up, threatened to shoot whoever interfered. Of course such a force would soon work out the mine, and he proposed that the miners present drive away the Chilenos robbers, shooting them down if necessary, take possession of the sluices before they were cleaned up and the gold panned out, and restore the property to Burt and Grove, whom we all knew to be the rightful owners.

All agreed to this, and after some preliminary drill and the understanding that in the event of a fight we must stand by each other, the little company left the timber and marched for the mine. It was only about forty rods from our place of meeting, and at our appearance the Chilenos, dropping their implements, took up their guns and immediately formed a line of defense.

They were, no doubt, expecting us, and had been reënforced from the Spanish Flat. Without the least parley or chance of peaceful agreement, our leader seemed about to precipitate a bloody conflict. But at his command, when within about fifteen or twenty rods of their front we gave a yell, and made a rush, at the same time raising our rifles as if ready to fire. Just then a few left the center of their line, taking shelter behind a bank of earth, and the next moment the whole body was in confusion and rushing for the timber in the direction of Spanish Flat.

Fortunately not a gun had been fired on either side. We followed them, but they kept well in the advance, and as we came out of the timber, a native Californian met us, gesticulating and shouting, "*¡Dos horas! ¡dos horas!*" (Two hours! two hours!). Soon it was understood that the Chilenos wanted two hours in which to get ready to leave; but our leader gave them to understand that if they were not gone in one hour, they might expect to be fired on. Many of our company, considering them robbers and dangerous characters, were willing to shoot them down; and probably within half an hour the Chilenos who had participated in working the Burt and Grove claim had all gone.

In the meantime I had an interview with the Californian, and he related the story of the sale; said it was made in good faith, and that he, with others present, would be able to recognize those who had sold the claim and received the money. When I told Murphy, our leader, he insisted that they should come and see whether those who made the fraudulent sale were in our company; but after an examination they decided that they were not.

However, they so described them that some of our company recognized them as two men who had followed gambling in this vicinity. The villains were not found; but the unfortunate Chilenos lost their money, and were driven like criminals from the community.

I was decidedly ashamed of my participation in the affair, and lost no opportunity of explaining to both Spanish and English speaking people the perfect innocence of the Chilenos. But it was a terrible danger to all concerned; and the Californian who was with them said, had it not been that they were far from home and surrounded by a people with whom they could not converse, the Chilenos would have stood their ground and shot us down, for they believed we were simply a band of robbers after their property.

Early in June, 1852, Thomas Finney, John Stevenson, John Van Benschoten, and I organized a mining company to operate on Texas Bar on the south fork of the American River, and when the river had fallen to the proper stage we commenced work, putting in a very profitable summer.

It was only about two miles from Placerville, then generally known as Hangtown, from the fact that at that place five men had been hung the same day on one tree. As related to me by one who professed to have been an eye witness, there was in the village a saloon and gambling den known as the headquarters of a notorious gang of thugs. Men supposed to have gold were killed and robbed on the streets at night; others were murdered in their cabins. No one felt safe, either on the street or at his work; and yet no one doubted as to who were the criminals. Finally, at the funeral of a man whose murder and robbery had been traced to certain gamblers, the citizens resolved that every professional gambler, that is, every one who followed no other occupation, must leave town within twenty-four hours.

At this the thugs became more bitter and defiant than ever, and a leading citizen who had obtained evidence involving four of them in the murder was shot and killed while passing their headquarters.

The enraged miners immediately gathered, surrounded the saloon, and finding the four against whom charges of murder had been made, and who were suspected of firing the recent fatal shots, seized and bound them hands and feet and without further ceremony hung them to a tree.

The proprietor of the saloon became very angry, charged the crowd with murder, and threatened to avenge the death of his patrons. The mob was in no mood to listen to such talk. There were those present whose friends had been shot down and robbed, as they believed by those men; and suspecting that he was an accomplice in their crimes, a rope was quietly obtained and suddenly the noose was slipped over his head, and he was dragged to the tree and hung up with the rest. Although the twenty-four hours were not yet expired, the mob concluded to finish the business and get rid of the professional gamblers. But upon making search not one could be found; they had taken the hint and gone.

This affair occurred more than a year before we began work on Texas Bar, but we found that many of the roughs had returned, or others had come, and quarrels and shootings were of frequent occurrence; but so long as they were confined to the saloon element, the citizens paid little attention to them.

Placerville was the base of supplies for a large mining region. As in other mining camps, so on Texas Bar, provisions and mining implements were paid for by the miners and distributed by the merchants. And so it often happened that miners going to Placerville bought not only for their own, but for other companies, and thus often carried large quantities of gold.

Mr. Anderson, one of these agents from Chili Bar, half a mile down the river from our camp, on his way to Placerville in the early part of July, 1852, was murdered and robbed in Placer Cañon. A week later another miner met a similar fate near Placerville.

These murders created a profound sensation, and while there was a lack of positive evidence, there were strong suspicions of guilt resting on certain persons; and in many camps the question was discussed of making another raid on the saloons and gamblers, but many people had been intimidated and feared their enmity.

As a matter of fact, those who were recently killed had given offense by publicly suggesting the suppression of the thug element; and, with others, had been threatened with violence. But while people generally would feel safer to have them suppressed there was a common hesitation about opposing them, and individuals shrunk from becoming targets for their wrath.

While miners, merchants, and mechanics had real interests at stake, those dreaded enemies of society, after the commission of crime, need only run and hide themselves in some other locality. None better understood the force of bravado and bluff; and busy people, while engaged in their business pursuits, were often greatly annoyed by them, though sometimes their reckless interference brought them to grief. I give an example.

One afternoon in the latter part of August, 1852, I went to Placerville for supplies. After I had completed my purchases and was ready to return, I discovered two desperate characters on horseback parading the streets. Both were, or pretended to be, intoxicated, and flourishing large revolvers, they rode furiously while shouting to people on the streets, "Hunt your holes! Hunt your holes!" And, of course, people tried to keep out of their way.

Hoping to avoid an encounter with them, I remained some time in the store; but supposing they had gone, at last ventured out.

Placerville at that time was composed of two clusters of houses, with quite a space between. Scarcely had I left the shelter of the store when here they came over a little ridge from the upper town; one on each sidewalk, flourishing their pistols and howling at the top of their voices.

A large, well-proportioned man walked a short distance in advance of me. His clay-stained clothing indicated that he was a miner; a coat lay on his left arm; attached to his belt a large revolver hung at his back; and on the seat of his pantaloons was a large patch, evidently a piece from a flour sack, as it bore the mark EXTRA FINE. He would first meet the reckless rider, and I hesitated to see what would be the result.

Nearer came the man on horseback, still flourishing his pistol and shouting, "Clear the track! Clear the track!" A shot from the horseman's pistol glanced along the sidewalk. The miner's hand had been laid upon his pistol; now it was instantly drawn and fired.

The rider threw up his arms; then he made an effort to grasp the saddle, but fell heavily to the sidewalk; the horse shied into the middle of the street and the rider on the opposite side went quietly down to the South Fork, a noted gambling headquarters. The fate of his comrade seemed to have tamed or sobered him.

When I reached the body, the miner stood beside his victim; with some emotion he said, "I'm powerful sorry I had to do it; but I won't be shot nor run over if I can help it."

Thinking the man might have been stunned by the fall, we tried to raise him up; but his body was limp and lifeless, the blood flowing profusely from a wound in his left breast. I don't think he regained consciousness. He was a fine looking young man. His life might have been of inexpressible value to himself, and an honor and blessing to his friends. Alas, alas, for the use he made of it! and then vainly threw it away. Surely, "he died as the fool dieth."

A crowd gathered and the body was carried away. That the man who slew him did it in self-defense was not questioned, and the event soon ceased to elicit remark; but doubtless he was remembered somewhere.

Our associations on Texas Bar were very pleasant. There were several companies, and among them several graduates from eastern colleges, two of whom had made the tour of Europe and Palestine, while our own mess was very congenial.

Mr. Thomas Finney from McHenry County, Illinois, some fifty years of age, was an intelligent Christian gentleman. Threatened with pulmonary consumption, in 1850 he had crossed the plains in search of health. He found it before he reached California, and two years' residence seemed to have given him perfect soundness of body.[1] He was a diligent Bible student, respected and beloved by all who knew him.

John Stevenson, some thirty years of age, a native of England, but for some years a resident of Boone County, Illinois; intelligent, genial, unselfish; of whom it was said, "He never acquired a bad habit."

John Van Benschoten, a native of Delaware County, New York; some twenty years of age, rather reticent, with a mind for business methods, and of untiring energy. He was one of the victims of the New York shipping swindle, mentioned in Chapter 5, but was fortunate in being able to make the trip from Panama to San Francisco by steamer.

In the mines we all worked alike, but outside of this each sustained his relation to the others according to taste or adaptation. For instance, Mr. Finney was our adviser, the Nestor of the camp; his wise counsel and sweet spirit exerted an influence for good to all on the Bar. Mr. Van Benschoten was general business manager; Mr. Stevenson was cook, and your humble servant, the author, assistant.

---

[1] Resort to a plains journey as a cure for consumption and other diseases was a well-known practice of the second quarter of the nineteenth century. See in this connection Josiah Gregg, *Commerce of the Prairies*, published as the Lakeside Classics volume for 1926, pp. xxvi-xxvii and 21–22.

Our habitation was simply some posts placed upright in the ground, supporting a roof of boughs. It made a good shade and as there was no rain in summer we enjoyed the outdoor air. A tent was pitched beside our booth, but was seldom used.

At first we were greatly annoyed by fleas (*pulex irritans*); they seemed to be everywhere, but more especially where we fixed our bunks and tried to sleep. However, we were advised to place our cots on a pile of the branches of a kind of black alder, which fleas avoid, and in doing so we were much relieved.

In the latter part of August a band of forty or fifty Indians camped on the opposite bank of the river, spending about two weeks mining and fishing. Just below Texas Bar the stream descended in a narrow, swift channel, among large granite boulders. Here, with long spears, they caught many fine salmon.

All these Indians, even the young children, seemed to be expert swimmers. And no wonder, for they were compelled to learn while scarcely more than infants. Often several mothers would take their small children to the top of the rapids, where one after another would be dropped in, and we could see their little black heads in the white foam, bobbing around the great boulders in the swift current until they reached the eddy below, where there were always several ready to take them ashore.

They did not always want to go in, but the mother would say, "Shut your mouth," and drop them in. It was frightful to see them swept down through the deep water. Sometimes there were indications of strangling, but generally when taken out they would shout and laugh as though they had not only done some great thing but enjoyed it.

While on Texas Bar I became acquainted with Mr. Smith, who then lived at the little hamlet of Kelsey, on the bluffs about three miles north of our bar. He had been a mountaineer and scout; had married a squaw, who dying had left him with one child, a girl, at that time, 1852, about ten years old. He was familiarly known as Peg Leg Smith, and had rendered himself famous by having amputated his own leg.

In a difficulty with some Indians, one fired at him, shattering the bone just below his knee. He knew that without amputation the wound would result in death, and as none of his companions were willing to undertake the operation he resolved to do it himself. Preparing bandages as best he could and having a fire in which after removing it from the stock, he heated the barrel of a horseman's pistol with which to sear the ends of small blood vessels; with improvised grip, and threads to bind the larger ones; and sharpening his knives to a keen edge, with his own hands he severed his leg at the knee, and with the help of a comrade, who had not the nerve to undertake the cutting, bound it up in good shape; and years afterward, when I knew him, he was able to walk quite actively on a wooden leg of his own manufacture.

His daughter, lively, intelligent, and shy, possessed fine features, and considering her Indian blood and habit of going barehead in the sun was strangely fair, and might be called a pretty brunette.

About the first of September immigrants from across the plains began to arrive at Placerville, the direct route for those who came by way of Carson's River, and two young men from Michigan, Uriah and Charles T——, brothers, came to Texas Bar and began mining, but finding the place would not pay, removed to another on the bar, where they were more successful.

Two weeks later their cousin, Mr. P. O. Soper, arrived from Indiana, and his two cousins, taking advantage of the confidence naturally arising from kinship, sold him their rejected claim. He was just recovering from a severe illness, and with more ambition than strength, a week's faithful effort not only proved the mine worthless, but nearly wore him out.

However, he gave them all the gold he had taken out and asked them to cancel the bargain. This they refused, insisting that the contract should stand good, whether he could get the amount out of the claim or not, and if he would not agree to this he should not remain in their camp another night.

Having paid for all the provisions he had used, and learned from others on the bar, that, after testing it, they had sold him a worthless claim, of course he was willing to leave them.

Saturday, Oct. 2, 1852. The winter rains had set in, the river had risen somewhat, and my three partners had gone to the uplands to prepare for winter diggings. Having pitched my tent, I was working alone on a corner of our bar, which still paid fair wages, but was liable to be submerged at any time.

Rain had fallen all day, and a little before dark, going up on the hillside for firewood, I met Mr. Soper, and supposing he was on a similar errand, in a familiar way suggested that while rain was good for green things generally, it was doubtful whether it would benefit him.

After some pleasantries, he told me of the trouble with his cousins and that he was now on his way to a place about five miles beyond Placerville, hoping to find a friend with whom he had crossed the plains.

I knew the road; it was difficult in daylight, and in the coming darkness and rain it seemed impossible, especially for one so broken in health, and inviting him to my tent, I advised him to wait at least until morning. After some hesitation the invitation was accepted.

His work had been too hard; he was prostrated for over a week, but finally recovered sufficiently to assist in my work. He was very companionable and well educated; English was his native tongue, but he read and spoke German, and was a very fine singer. We soon became attached to each other, and I invited him to spend the winter with me at Downing's Ravine.

It was November before we left Texas Bar, but most of our effects had been removed, and we waited a few days for our tent to dry, so it could be taken with us. The rains, however, continued and our mine was flooded; at last there appeared a break in the clouds, and crossing the river at Chili Bar we started for Downing's Ravine.

Delayed at the ferry, it was late in the afternoon when we began the ascent, and quite dark when we reached Dutch Creek, where, to our dismay we found that the great pine chopped across the channel to form a footbridge had been swept away. I remembered another about a mile farther up, but our way lay across a flat perforated with mining holes, twenty or thirty feet deep and now all nearly full of water, and an approach to the soft edge of one of these would be exceedingly dangerous. It was a night of Egyptian darkness; the clouds had returned, rain fell in torrents, and groping our way to the trunk of a large pine we took shelter on its lee side.

Our clothes were wet through and our matches too damp to kindle a fire; the cold constantly increased until the rain changed to snow, and in the piercing north wind it seemed as though we would perish, but we could only sit there and shiver as hour after hour passed away. When the dawn enabled us to distinguish the shaft's dark mouth from the white snow we hurried on and in due time reached our cabin. But while life lasts we will remember that night on Dutch Flat.

However, my only inconvenience was a severe cold, of which a good sweat relieved me; but Soper was again prostrated, and it was several weeks before he could engage in work. For some time I feared he would die, and especially regretted that there was no physician within reach; but applying such remedies as could be obtained, and watching with him day and night, with all possible care, at last he rallied and came slowly back to health.

When he was able to care for himself during the day, I improved the rains in washing gold along the upland gulches; always profitable when there was plenty of water.

Returning to the cabin one afternoon, I found one of Soper's cousins, who had come to demand pay for the worthless claim which they had sold him. He was inclined to doubt Soper's statement that even though willing to pay he did not then have the gold. Perhaps not aware of his sickness, but supposing we had been doing a lucrative business, he seemed resolved to compel payment of his unjust demand.

Of course it was no affair of mine and I intended to say nothing about it, but after considerable abusive language and threats, holding his rifle in his left hand, with the right he gave Soper a blow on the face.

Snatching my pistol, and holding it behind me, out of his sight, I said, "Hold on T——, that will not do here."

Turning his rifle toward me, and bringing his right hand to the lock, ready to raise the hammer, he replied, "Do you take it up?"

The next instant my pistol was cocked, and within a short distance of his head.

"Yes, T——, I take it up. I've nothing to do with your business matters, but while Soper is sick in my cabin no one shall lay hands on him if I can help it."

Retreating a few steps, resting the breech of his rifle on the floor, he said, "Mr. Steele I have nothing against you.—I've no quarrel with you."

"Nor have I any quarrel with you Mr. T——, but I do regret that you drew your rifle on me and compelled me to get the drop on you; it might have been serious."

Nearly two weeks after this, while working alone in a ravine, and stooping, some one fired at me; the ball entered near the center of the crown of my hat and cutting off a lock of my hair passed out at the side, lodging in a pile of soft sand and mud.

Rising up, I saw smoke above a bunch of chaparral in the direction from which the bullet had come, but could not distinguish any person. Whoever fired the shot was evidently concealed, and made his escape under cover of the brushwood. Just over the ridge, on the main road, was Wallingford's saloon; upon inquiry I was informed that Mr. T—— while out hunting that afternoon had called there, perhaps to brace up his courage with drink.

I found the bullet; it was not bruised but unusually large for a rifle, and bore the marks of the grooves of the gun. Next an acquaintance borrowed the rifle which T—— carried that afternoon, and we found the ball was an exact fit.

Considering that this was the only rifle we could find with so large a bore, suspicion pointed very directly to Mr. T—— as the man who had tried to take my life; possibly because of my friendship for Mr. Soper, or possibly he might have known that I had with me about five hundred dollars in gold dust.

But whatever the cause, I can testify that it is not pleasant to know there is an enemy with a rifle on your track. The more I studied the circumstances the more the awful fact appeared that their demand on Soper was premeditated robbery, and if it seemed to them necessary to accomplish their purpose, they would not hesitate at murder. However, Soper's health improved, the winter passed quite pleasantly, and we did a fair business in mining.

During the winter an incident occurred that so illustrated the general character of the miners that I mention it.

In the fall measles were epidemic, and Mr. A—— from Georgia came near dying with an attack; and when Soper had recovered so as to walk around, he found him in a neighboring cabin with greatly impaired health. He was utterly dependent upon his few acquaintances, and so discouraged, homesick, and in despair of ever seeing his family that there seemed no hope of his recovery.

We therefore concluded to bring his case before the miners and see what could be done for his relief. Preparing a number of subscription papers representing his condition and soliciting aid, we circulated them in the mining camps and were immediately joined by others, who appointed a time and place for the collectors to meet; and when they assembled and presented their papers and gold it was discovered that $1,260 had been raised.

The same evening Mr. A——was informed of the action of the miners, and that there was nothing to hinder his going home just as soon as he was able. He was quite overcome with emotion, and after expressing his gratitude, said, "I think I can start in the morning; I feel so much better, it's like coming back to life."

After a few days I went with him to Coloma, and informed the stage company that the miners were sending him home to save his life; he was carried free to Sacramento, and, on the stage company's recommendation, received a free ticket to San Francisco, and in due time with improved health joined his family.

Chapter 9

A NATIVE TRAGEDY

THE Indians of the Columbia ranch were active miners in their way, using only a pan for washing, and as they generally worked where the bed rock was bare, they dug with their hunting knives in the slate. The squaws, always in companies of five or six, sometimes used a pick and spade, but I never saw an Indian use a rocker or long-tom, unless at work with whites. Possibly they never had enough gold at one time to buy such machinery.

A party of five squaws worked below us in the ravine for several weeks, coming over from their village every morning about sunrise and returning toward sunset. Two carried infants tied to a framework of boughs, and while the mothers were at work the babies were hung on the swaying branch of a tree.

Near the place where they worked were a number of large bunches of chaparral. One day an old woman came and asked in Spanish for matches. Giving her some, she kindled a fire in the chaparral, and we noticed that some of them spent the greater part of the day there; but it elicited no particular attention until they started for their village, when as they passed us we observed that they carried an extra baby. Not tied to a frame like the others, but in the arms, presumably, of its mother.

Evidently it had been born that day among the chaparral; and whether wrapped in swaddling clothes we knew not, but there was not even a convenient manger in which it might be laid. So with an endurance which probably only mothers know, it was conveyed more than three miles over the ridge to the village in her sheltering arms.

Early in March, 1853, Mr. Soper discovered and opened a mine near the head of Kelsey Cañon, and as the winter rains were supposed to be about over he built a summer residence, covering it only with the leafy boughs of pine and live oak. After occupying it he was frequently annoyed at night with a rustling among the leaves over his bed. He believed it was made by an owl or some animal, and on firing his pistol in the direction it would immediately leave, but perhaps before morning the rustling of the leaves would be heard again. The disturber was easily frightened, and was never seen or heard in the day time; nor could he find anything like a nest on the roof. Curious to know what it really was, he prepared combustibles, and when it was heard quietly flashed them into a flame, and in the light was surprised and disgusted to see a large snake peering through the leaves just above his bed. Of course it was not such a companion as one would select for his bedroom.

Some time after, while I was spending a night with Soper we heard a noise among the leaves and a random shot brought his snakeship down. It was harmless, of the genus masticoplis, or coach whip, slender, and about six feet long.

Venomous snakes were seldom found in this region; rarely a rattlesnake, but frequently a colubrine, resembling the milksnake, and which would not hesitate to come into your camp or cabin, as the following incident illustrates.

After being away for several days, I returned to the cabin in company with Mr. Jeremiah Dobin. We had left our bunks with the blankets spread, it was about midnight, and tired and sleepy, we undressed and lay down, when Dobin remarked, "How does it happen that my blanket is wet?" and then, with a scream, sprang from the cot. Lighting a candle and examining his bed, we found that what he had taken for water was the cold coil of a large snake (colubrine) against his leg, and when it began to wriggle for more room, of course he at once surrendered the entire bunk. The harmless reptile was killed and cast out, and a thorough search satisfied us that no others were in the chinks, or about the cabin, before we could quietly yield ourselves to sleep.

Some time after Soper had gotten rid of his haunting snake, he said to me: "Don't think me superstitious; they say to dream of snakes indicates that you have enemies; but my snake was no dream; you know I have enemies; you heard one of them threaten to take my life. I never saw those people until we met in California. I thought they were friends as well as kindred, but I have found them capable of any meanness. We may meet sometime, and I have to defend myself. It is my prayer that it may never happen; I shall avoid them if I can, but should I be compelled to shed blood, I might want your testimony in court. Will you please correspond with me so that I may know where to find you?"

I had only to refer to the bullet hole in my hat, and the many circumstances pointing to T——, to impress my mind with the thought that sometime I might need Soper's testimony as much as he could mine. It was another case of David and Jonathan. As a consequence we kept trace of each other for many years, even while serving in different departments of the Union army, and it was not until I became an itinerant minister among the Mexicans that I lost his address.

I was now working alone and washing gravel, some of which I had thrown up to disintegrate and dry more than a year before. The water was failing in places, and many of the miners had gone to the larger streams. However, I was doing well; too busy to be lonesome, until I was startled with the story that my neighbor, Mr. William Hall, had been robbed and murdered in his cabin, scarcely a mile from mine. I knew him well; a kind, steady, industrious, upright man. He crossed the plains from Missouri in the summer of 1850, coming into the mines by way of Placerville.

Last fall he sent his gold home by express, but he probably had his winter's earnings in or about his cabin, and like myself was living alone. He was found by two men living at some distance, but working near him. Not seeing him at work, at noon they went to his cabin and found him cold in death.

Evidently he had been shot in the door of his cabin and the body dragged inside, and candle drippings indicated that the place had been searched in the night. We had no idea who committed the deed. Such things had been done near the towns and in places visited by Joaquin's band, but this was the first in this part of the country, and I no longer felt safe to be alone in my cabin.

As the miners had no safe place of deposit they had been accustomed to carry their gold with them; usually in their coat pockets, taken with them to their work, and at night placed under their heads. In buckskin sacks men kept thousands of dollars in gold dust with them day and night.

Thus it came to pass that after a man had been a year or two in the mines, if he was industrious and temperate, it was supposed that he had gold; and if he ventured into certain localities alone he was in danger of being murdered and robbed.

I now realized that an attack was liable any night, and I arranged my cabin so as to be sure that no one could enter without waking me; then placing my pistol, butcher knife, and axe within convenient reach, all things being ready for defense, I lay down to sleep. In one respect the danger did me good. It led me nearer to God. When reconciled through the atonement in Christ, placing all in His hands and feeling that whatever happened God's love would not forsake me, sleep was sweet.

As my cabin was windowless I usually depended upon the open door for light; and my table, against the side of the house, had a chink a little above which lighted it quite well.

One morning while I was at breakfast a little California cat, brown, with dark stripes like a coon, crept in, caught a slice of bread from the table, and tried to escape through the chink, but the slice was too large, and in an instant I threw a towel over it, and after a fight made it prisoner.

Nailing some slats across a box for a cage, I put it in and fed it some fresh beef, which it readily ate. The next morning it ate from my hand, seeming quite tame; so nailing my blanket over the fireplace, and closing the chinks that it might not escape, I let it out of the box. After exploring the room, it devoured a bit of meat, and seemed to want more; it had no fear of being handled, but finally climbed upon my shoulder and began to purr as though we were old friends.

Thinking it was domesticated, I opened the door and gave it liberty. It did not leave immediately, but came in, took another little slice of beef from my hand, and then started for the timber. Following it, I found where it lived in a hollow tree. It always remembered me, and coming often for food would linger around the cabin, but never permitted me to put my hand upon it again.

About this time Tchubo, the son of Capitan Juan of the Columbia ranch, came and wanted to work for me. He was about sixteen years old, stout, and remarkably bright. I was glad to have him with me and I felt safer, especially at night; and as he did fair work I paid him at the rate of five dollars a day.

Soon he was neatly dressed, as he said, *Como un Americano* (like an American). Besides his native Indian, he had considerable knowledge of Spanish, and made wonderful progress in learning the English language. A smooth piece of slate about four feet long and three wide, placed on posts driven into the earthen floor of my cabin, had served as kitchen and dining room table, but now was used also as a kind of blackboard in teaching Tchubo to read and write.

He had learned that Juan, his father's name in Spanish, was the same as mine, John in English, and so he wanted me to tell him what his name was in English. This puzzled me, but I finally said, "Thomas, or it might be only Tom."

This pleased him, and he repeated, "Juan, John, Tom," and insisted on being called by the English name, Tom.

When not at work, he usually employed his time in making letters and pronouncing them in English, and by the constant repetition of words, phrases, numbers, and sentences he became quite proficient in the English language.

His father often visited us and seemed much pleased that his son could talk English and was learning to read and write. I became greatly interested in Tom. His older brother had been killed in battle with the Placerville Indians, and I thought when he took his father's place as chief he would introduce educational methods, and perhaps through Christianity save his people.

Another thing, they were not beggars, but did considerable mining, and expected to pay for what they received. One day, leaving Tom at work, I went to the cabin to prepare dinner, and was surprised to find several Indians there. They had found my tin box containing about fifty dollars in gold dust, and had poured it on the table to look at it. When they saw that I wanted to use the table, one swept the gold into the box, saying as he did so, "*Todo hay*" (all there). Curious to know whether any had been taken, for it was a great temptation, when they were gone I weighed it and found it, sure enough, "all there."

To me these Indians were not only friendly, but, as far as I knew, truthful and honest, and I felt perfectly safe in person and property to the extent of their ability to protect me.

Tom usually spent Sunday at home, returning either in the afternoon or early Monday morning. If for any reason he wanted to remain away a few days he always let me know in advance; and so when he failed to appear one Monday morning I felt somewhat anxious; but towards noon he came from the direction of Wallingford's saloon, his unsteady step revealing the fact that he was drunk.

He wanted to dig, but was utterly unable, and at last I coaxed him to go with me to the cabin, where he lay down and slept until near supper time. Awaking and coming where I was at work, he complained, "*Tom muy enfermo*" (very sick) "sick, heap sick."

"Yes," said I, "Tom you've been drunk, *muy borracho* (very drunk), what did you drink?"

"*Aguardiente*" (brandy).

"Who gave it to you?"

"Wallingford."

I remarked: "It will make anybody sick, make them do what they don't want to, and make them so they don't know what they do. You Tom, never drink any more *aguardiente*."

"Never any more, never!" said he with emphasis, and placing his hand upon his stomach and soon turning away he vomited freely. Coming to the cabin and sipping a little coffee, he was finally able to take some supper. He said he had never tasted *aguardiente* before, and did not know it would make him sick. From talking with his father, as well as from his own statement, I do not think Tom had ever before tasted spirituous liquors.

One morning, a week after this, I sent him with a note, as I had often done, to Mr. Cooledge of Peru for groceries. It was afternoon when he returned, drunk and without the groceries. When questioned, he said they were at Wallingford's.

As soon as he became quiet I visited Wallingford's. They told me that he had stopped there on his way from Peru and had engaged in gambling, drinking freely of whiskey, and finally left without taking his package, and had probably forgotten it. Explaining the matter, I begged of them as a favor to me as well as to him not to let him have liquor of any kind.

The next morning I questioned him as to drinking *aguardiente* again, and he promptly replied, with perfect candor, "*No, no he bebido aguardiente, bebi whiskey*" (no, I did not drink brandy, I drank whiskey). This accorded with Wallingford's statement, and I could not resist the impression that Tom had been deceived in the name, and doubtless would have refused brandy.

It reminded me of the proverb: "Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging, and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise." And I was aware that many young men with greater advantages than Tom had been deceived thereby. I tried to explain that whiskey made him drunk the same as brandy, and that rum, gin, ale, and wine were just as bad. Still, I entertained the hope that Wallingford was manly enough to refuse him liquor.

Next questioning him about his money, taking the empty purse from his pocket, he replied, "All gone."

"Who got your money?"

"*No se* (I don't know), one man at Wallingford's." Of course, that was all they wanted of Tom, and I suppose he gambled it away.

The next Saturday afternoon Capitan Juan made us a visit. After supper I paid Tom his earnings, $15, and saying he would return Monday morning they started for home. Knowing that Capitan Juan never drank, I was glad they were together, feeling that his son was safe with him.

Late Sunday afternoon Tom returned; there was blood on his clothes and hands, and he was greatly excited, but too drunk to tell just what had happened. Flourishing his hunting knife, he tried to show me how somebody had been killed, but who it was or who did it I could not make out, but I began to regret having anything to do with him. At last he fell into a deep slumber, and did not wake until morning. Then, questioning him about the blood, he seemed to remember all that had occurred from the time he and his father had left my cabin until his return.

On the way to Peru for provisions, passing Wallingford's saloon, he came out and invited them in; Capitan Juan refused to enter, and then Wallingford gave Tom a small bottle of some kind of liquor. His father took it, smelled of it, and at once dashed it in pieces against a rock.

The next day Tom and two other Indians came back to the saloon, engaged in gambling, and all drank freely of what Tom called "*vino*" (wine); and when all their gold was gone, started for the village. The two Indians quarreled, one stabbing the other with a knife. Tom tried to help the wounded Indian home, but he died on the way. And then Tom, afraid of his father's anger, should he appear before him drunk, came to me.

Afterward I learned that the one who committed the deed told of it in the village, and the friends went out, brought in the body, and prepared for the funeral.

Now the fact dawned upon my mind that in paying Tom wages and teaching him English, instead of helping him, as I had fondly hoped, I had put him into the hands of the worst kind of savages. While he had no money he was comparatively safe from the saloon keeper, but when they saw him well dressed, and he understood enough English to tell them in answer to their questions that he had earned the money, paid for his clothes, and had money left, all the wisdom "of that old serpent the devil," was invoked to compass his ruin. Not that they had anything against him; they simply wanted his money, and gladly descended to the lowest depths of merciless meanness in order to get it.

With Tom I attended the funeral of the murdered man. Entering the village, we passed a man sitting alone at the door of a wigwam.

"That's the man," said Tom. "He killed him, and must die."

"Why don't he go away?" I inquired.

"Because if they not find him, they take his father, his brother, his son; somebody die —you see."

Afterward, upon inquiry, I found that this was a kind of common law among these Indians. When murder was committed, the murderer must be put to death. If he ran away, the nearest of his male kindred whom they could find must die in his stead within a year. But Capitan Juan said he never knew a case where an innocent person was executed for his kindred's crime.[2]

The funeral was inexpressibly sad; every countenance and voice indicated genuine sorrow. The body was burned with the usual ceremonies, and after they were concluded twelve warriors with bows and arrows slung over the left shoulder, and each with a long flint-pointed spear in the right hand, in charge of two officers, came suddenly upon the scene. Marching with them, unbound, was the man who had killed his companion. Passing to the front of the chief's wigwam, they halted, and their prisoner was seated on the ground. Capitan Juan came out and after talking awhile in Indian also sat down.

Then followed something like a trial, conducted by one of the officers. Tom was called and questioned; others came forward and spoke. It seemed as though the entire village, with a number of whites, were present. The guards kept a large space open so that the chief, officers, prisoner, and witnesses could be seen.

---

[2] The custom here described was widespread among the Indian tribes of North America. A vivid account of an Indian execution in Michigan is given in *The Autobiography of Gurdon S. Hubbard*, the Lakeside Classics volume for 1911, pp. 67–72.

Again the chief arose, and with great earnestness and solemnity spoke at length. The Indians were deeply affected by his talk; and how I did regret that I did not understand it. When the speech was ended, two men approached with cords of some kind of bark and bound the prisoner's hands together at the wrists; another cord around the elbows was tied across the back, and the limbs were bound firmly together at the ankles and knees. He made no resistance, and I am not aware that he spoke during the operation.

Then a blanket was thrown over his head, and a cord placed below his knees and over the back of his neck, drawing his head and knees together, and so, with the blanket bound closely around him, he was carried outside the village, where a funeral pile of dry wood had been built and already fired, and he was laid thereon.

Sick at heart I turned away from the awful scene, realizing, as I did not before, why the deep sadness everywhere seen and heard, but also convinced that the untutored Indian, who, in the delirium of intoxication, slew his friend and met his cruel fate, was less guilty than the "civilized" white man, who, knowing the probable consequences, yet to obtain the paltry half ounce of gold furnished the liquor and tempted him to drink.

By questioning Tom, I obtained an idea of his father's address. He reminded the Indians that these two men were good men, brave warriors; they had families who loved them, everybody respected them. They were friends; friends always like brothers; would always have been so, only for the white man's drink. It makes people bad. If white men drink it, it makes them bad; if you drink it, it will make you bad; if I (Juan) drink it, it will make me bad. It is bad, always bad, very bad.

"Tom," said I, "do you think your father is right?"

"Yes," said he, "white man's drink always bad; it makes me bad when I have it and don't drink it."

"How is that, Tom?"

"When my father took the bottle and broke it, I was *muy enojado* (very angry) at my father, and come back next day to get more; I ask them to come; now both dead; Tom bad."

Doubtless Tom's philosophy was correct, and there was encouragement in his candor and self-accusation; and I fondly hoped he might become as bitterly opposed to the use of strong drink as his father. But alas for Tom; he had already acquired that unquenchable thirst, and there were those who, in its most seductive form, put the temptation in his way.

It was not long until Tom was drunk again. Determined if possible to save him, and knowing it was contrary to law to give an Indian liquor and that the Indian affairs were in the hands of the War Department, I addressed a letter to General Hotchkiss, then in command of the Pacific Department of the army. I promptly received a reply, with necessary instructions and blanks for making out a complaint against any one selling or giving intoxicating liquors to Indians. But now unexpected difficulties arose; no Indian's testimony could be accepted, and no white man who knew the facts was willing to testify.

Again I appealed to Wallingford, urging that to whomsoever he sold liquor, let none be given to Tom. He had probably been informed of my effort to invoke the law, and replied with a volley of profane and insulting epithets, and ended by saying, "I understand you are trying to make trouble; better let it drop. You attend to your little business, and we'll attend to ours; and, mark my words, if you interfere with our affairs, you'll be delivered up to your God."

After this Tom became worse; whatever he earned went for liquor. Losing his former self-respect, he worked but little, and would beg for money to buy liquor; and to the grief of his father, spent his time among the saloons. Other members of the tribe became equally debauched, until it seemed as though it would have been far better had they all perished with smallpox. And I believe that the sad fate of Columbia Ranch overtook every Indian village in the California mines.

Chapter 10

INDIAN GOVERNMENT AND CUSTOMS

SUNDAY, May 1, 1853. Yesterday afternoon Tom went home and I visited the post office at Coloma. Mail from the last steamer had just been distributed, and as the news spread, as usual, people flocked in from all sides.

Some were made glad with good news from home; others, anxious because the expected letters had not come, usually tried, after the style of an auctioneer, to buy a paper containing the general news from their part of the country. It was common at such times to hear the exclamation, "Who has a paper for sale from New York?" or from such and such places; and people receiving papers, after their perusal, sometimes sold them for fifty cents or one dollar. Some, receiving bad news, went sorrowfully aside to weep.

A little below the post office, in the shade of some pines, people often retired to read their letters and papers. Paying a dollar for a copy of the New York *Weekly Tribune*, I went thither and sat down to read.

Soon a fine looking man stood up and with a voice of wonderful power and compass, sang the hymn beginning,

"O for a closer walk with God."

People were attracted, and gathered as silent, attentive listeners. Then, by invitation, a number joined with him in singing,

"Jesus lover of my soul."

The effect was inspiring; and there kneeling down he offered a prayer which made me feel that God was not only present, but considering our individual interests. Next, drawing a Bible from his pocket, he read the fifty-fifth chapter of Isaiah, with a few verses from the third chapter of John, and preached from the words of Isaiah, "Seek ye the Lord while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near."

I was very much impressed with the sermon, and glad to learn that he would preach at ten the next forenoon near Downing's Ravine.

Some interested men took sluice lumber, as yet unused, and prepared very comfortable seats in the shade of a great live oak, and at the appointed time a large congregation had assembled. Of course there were no women or children.

Several old hymns were sung, reminding us of home, its associations and worship. Several earnest prayers were offered, and then the minister preached a clear, earnest, and impressive sermon from the one hundred and sixteenth Psalm. Many were moved to tears; and in closing he announced an appointment to preach at five that afternoon in Coloma, but if they would remain, he would hold another service immediately after dinner in this place. All seemed desirous for this, and as my cabin was near he accepted an invitation to dinner.

We were gone about an hour and a half, and returning, came over a low ridge among clumps of chaparral, which concealed us until we were within a few rods of the seats, when, looking down upon them, a scene utterly unexpected met our view. Not all, but a large part of the congregation, divided into groups of twos, fours, perhaps eights, the members of each group facing each other and using the seats for tables, were busily engaged in playing cards. I don't know whether there was any money at stake, but just as soon as the minister was seen to be present the cards were quietly pocketed, and all assumed the attitude of serious attention.

Never before or since have I seen or heard of a congregation, while on the Sabbath waiting for the minister, engage in such a pastime, and I have always believed, had there been women and children present, the exercises would have taken a more intelligent and spiritual trend.

After another earnest discourse on John, twenty-first chapter and twenty-second verse, the words of Jesus to Peter, "What is that to thee? follow thou me"; and a fervent prayer, he went his way. Perhaps he was disappointed; he may have felt that his words were lost in the echoless air, but I am sure many were helped by being led back to the home life and associations, by seeing the true life in Christ, and made to realize personal responsibility, by being brought face to face with God.

If I learned that minister's name, unfortunately it was not written in my journal and has been forgotten, but I have thought he might have been William Taylor, afterward the world-wide missionary and Bishop of Africa.

Monday, May 9, 1853. As the dry season advanced and water began to fail on the uplands, closing my mining operations at Downing's Ravine, with James Badgely, John Berry, Levi and George Chapman, brothers, and George Ward, all recently from the Georgia gold mines, I started for Antoine

Cañon, far into the mountains between the North and Middle forks of the American River.

With provisions, blankets, and mining tools, we also carried a tent, eight by ten feet in size, and lest the snow might be too deep on the mountains for mules, also saving expense, we went on foot. It was our intention to make a reconnoissance, as a soldier would say, and if circumstances were promising to occupy the place and devote the summer to mining.

The snow was deep and quite hard on the ridges, but on descending into the cañon on the evening of May 11 we found that it had mostly melted away. We pitched our tent and the next morning made an exploration of the place. A number of houses had been built here last summer, all being vacated in the fall, and every roof had been broken in with the weight of the winter's snow. The water was too deep for successful mining.

About noon a heavy rain set in and we took shelter in the tent, which was very comfortable until toward night when the rain turned to snow, which accumulated so fast that the tent was soon in danger of collapse. At intervals by shoveling off the snow we relieved it of the heavy strain; but the snow continued all night and most of the next day, when the air became decidedly colder.

Snow in the cañon had fallen to the depth of about four feet, and of course we could not hope to begin mining within a month; so wading or rather wallowing out, we came down to the Middle Fork of the American River. On our way we stopped awhile at a mining camp known as Yankee Jim's. Here I found Professor Hamilton, of an eastern college, with whom I first became acquainted in Onion Valley, and he related the following terribly tragic incident, which had occurred a few weeks before.

The reader will remember Doctor Y——, mentioned in Chapter 4, among those who were snowbound in Onion Valley in the winter of 1850 and 1851. Graduated at West Point, he held the position of surgeon in the United States army and served through the Mexican War, but owing to his intemperate habits, after the battles around the city of Mexico he was returned to New Orleans and discharged for drunkenness while on duty.

Ashamed to go to his wife, who lived in Kentucky, he ceased correspondence with her and drifted to California. In some way she learned where he had gone and why he had lost his position in the army. Knowing his proud spirit, she suspected the reason of his silence and absence, and with woman's love, constancy, and devotion, resolved to save him if possible.

After addressing letters to him telling of her intention, she went to Sacramento, where he joined her, established a home, and practiced his profession over a year. But falling again into his old habits, doubtless to get him away from his associates, she persuaded him to go out into the mountains; and so they came to Yankee Jim's, where, being a skilled physician and surgeon, and the only one in that region, he entered upon a lucrative practice.

For some time they were prosperous and happy, but again his old enemy overtook him. His wife, an excellent Christian woman, with their little son about a year old, appealed to his better nature, and for a time sustained his nobler manhood in the desperate struggle to assert itself. But while he had money, men who knew his weakness plied their temptations beyond his power to resist.

Gambling was added to drunkenness, his earnings were soon gone, and he was reduced to want. His wife was neglected, sometimes abused. God only knew the burden of that devoted heart; away from congenial society, all her efforts vain, every cherished hope dying out; but she never gave him up, nor faltered in her efforts to save him.

One night, becoming troublesome, he was ejected from a saloon. Maddened and in a fit of delirium, he came home, took his gun, and threatened to shoot his wife. By accident he overturned the candle and put it out. In an effort to escape she ran to the door; opening it, the moonlight revealed her form and he fired, killing her instantly.

The miners, having great respect for her, incensed at his awful deed, at once hung him to a tree, and probably not until the tragedy was complete did they realize the presence of the orphan child. The little boy, scarcely a year old, was afraid of everybody except Robert Neal, a boy about sixteen years of age, who, employed by the doctor, had come from Sacramento with him and his wife and was present in the house when she was killed.

Poor Robert, left with such a responsibility on his hands and not a woman anywhere in that section of country to whom he could go for advice or help, was quite overwhelmed.

Fortunately the child was greatly attached to him and he knew how to prepare some kinds of food for it; but of course it missed its mother, and again and again cried itself to sleep.

Professor Hamilton kindly assisted Robert and the baby all he could, remaining with them in the house. He said the next night after the mother's death the baby was restless, cried frequently, and Robert carried it in his arms nearly all night. At daylight the place became quiet and his step was no longer heard, so the Professor peered into the room; there they lay in sound slumber, Robert holding the baby tenderly in his arms, and both faces showing traces of tears, as though they had cried themselves asleep.

Robert proposed taking the child to a family living near Sacramento, acquaintances, perhaps relatives of his. The miners helped him to arrange for the journey; so taking the doctor's horse and safely carrying his precious charge, he made the trip to the valley, and there in the family it found a home, protection, and care never realized anywhere else. But Robert Neal had become so attached to the little orphan that he concluded to remain near him, and wrote Professor Hamilton that he had found employment on a neighboring ranch.

Returning to Downing's Ravine, I received a very cordial visit from Capitan Juan and his son Tom, who informed me that representatives from eight Pah Ute villages would soon meet with theirs in council, and invited me to be present.

Of course, like most boys, I was more or less ambitious; but to succeed to the dignity of a seat in a council of Indian chiefs was something which neither my age nor ambition, up to that time, had ever suggested. However, I made a special effort to be present.

The place selected, about two miles northwest of the Columbia village, was prepared by placing a row of small poles firmly in the ground, inclosing a circle about six rods in diameter. Into these were closely woven rods of chaparral to the height of over eight feet. In the center was built the council fire, around which the chiefs smoked and deliberated.

Two entrances, one east, the other west, were so arranged by the braided walls overlapping, with a space of about three feet between, that at a short distance the passage was not visible, and a person might walk entirely around the corral and see no opening. Near the west entrance were fires, and a number of squaws engaged in cooking for the feast. They had cone-shaped baskets made of split wood fiber woven very firmly together and gummed with some kind of resinous substance, so that they not only held water, but water could be boiled in them.

This was effected by placing the baskets in pairs, the points in the ground so as to keep them steady. Water was poured into each; if they wanted to boil meat, it was put into one, and a hot stone, taken from the fire with a green branch bent like a pair of tongs, and nicely rinsed in the other, was dropped in with the meat. When it cooled it was taken out and another hot one put in, and in this way the water was kept boiling until the meat was cooked.

Usually one basket of water sufficed as a rinsing place for the hot stones, which kept many others boiling. So also they cooked a kind of paste, made of flour and water.

I noticed, however, that many brought their provisions with them. Some had large cakes made of acorns ground quite fine, after removing the shells, then mixed with grasshoppers and baked on a hot stone. Another article of diet was wild clover (alfalfa) ground very fine while green and baked.

They also used a brittle vine, in taste resembling lettuce; but, especially in the spring, their principal food was a bulb of pleasant taste, about the size of a plum, growing just below the surface of the ground, the place indicated by its fringe-like stem, only a few inches in height. Often bands of Indians were seen traversing the slopes, each with a pointed stick, digging and eating these bulbs. Doubtless from this practice they obtained the name "Diggers."

On the eastern side of the council house a large space was smoothed off and used for their drill or war dance, which continued day and night for eight days. I was told that there were about 800 warriors present, though I think only about 100 drilled or danced at the same time.

They began by forming concentric circles around the leader, each one holding a spear or long stick in his right hand; facing inward, they followed his motions, raising their spears perpendicularly and bringing the handle with a thump on the ground, meanwhile singing in unison, "*Hah, hi-yah; hah, hi-yah; hah, hi-yah*"; and at a sign from the leader they would all face outward, still keeping up the motion and the song. Then facing right or left they would march in circles; and at another signal the circles would be formed into squares, and all facing in the same direction, would march to another place near by. When one set became tired another took its place, and thus the performance was kept up.

A rather interesting game was played by two parties, each numbering about twenty. An open valley was selected and two trees, generally about forty rods apart, were designated as belonging one to either side. The persons in the play, each with a stick about four feet long, met midway between the trees. A belt about four inches wide and three feet long, made with strips of buckskin, cloth, or bark neatly braided, was thrown high into the air. After this no one must touch it with his hand until it had come in contact with one of the designated trees. It was tossed on the sticks, and the party bringing it first to their tree were winners.

It was a very exciting game and occasionally the belt would be tossed several times around both trees before touching either. Of course in the wild rush some would be hurt, but I never saw any indications of anger among them. On the contrary they would laugh and shout, and though suffering intense pain, were generally successful in avoiding any outward evidence of it.

At this meeting the leading members of the various villages became acquainted and difficulties and misunderstandings were defined, brought before the council, and, if possible, settled to the satisfaction of all. In this manner peace was concluded between the Placerville and Columbia villages, and when finally they separated there seemed to be universal friendship and good will.

Among other things they discussed the liquor problem, and were greatly surprised when I told them that the government made laws to protect them and would punish anyone known to give or sell liquor to them; something it did not do even for its own people.

It is a fact which needs to be emphasized that the government of the United States enacted laws for the protection of the Indians which were just and humane, and it has been in direct violation of these laws that the Indians were defrauded, debauched, and often murdered. Those who engaged in this work of outrage were not always citizens of the United States; and though sometimes Christian in name were not so in fact, but were too low, morally, to hold membership in any Protestant church.

Under our constitution and laws people enjoy greater liberty than in any other country. Like the mercy of God, who sendeth the rain and sunshine upon the just and unjust, so personal liberty is given whether the recipient is worthy or not. And it is those who pervert the liberty of which they are not worthy that have brought destruction upon the Indians and disgrace upon the government and people of the United States.

Odium still clings to New England because many years ago witches were hung there;

and yet no witch was ever hung in accordance with any law made in America; and so it may be said no Indian was ever corrupted according to any law of the United States. Our disgrace in this matter has been through the recognition of foreign customs and laws, and a criminal disregard of our own.

Most of the miners had gone to the lowlands and rivers, and I was afraid that when so many Indians assembled they might obtain liquor, become intoxicated, and not only fight among themselves, but provoke a war of extermination by an attack upon the whites. However, during the entire eight days I did not see an intoxicated Indian.

Perhaps those who sold liquor had a wholesome dread of drunken Indians; and the Indians themselves exercised a restraining influence upon each other. While there were doubtless many, who, had they been tempted, would have drunk to excess, yet the common sentiment was against the use of strong drink. And it is to be regretted that there are so many cities and villages in the United States where today the temperance sentiment is lower than among those Indians at that time. Even in the council were chiefs whose bloated faces and bloodshot eyes indicated that they were victims of drunkenness, but without a dissenting voice the white man's drink was condemned. Not even appetite, profit, companionship, party, or prejudice had taught them to prevaricate, but with perfect candor they innocently told the truth.

While the deliberations of the council were in the Indian tongue, they all possessed some knowledge of Spanish and took special pains to have all matters interpreted for my benefit. And conversing freely with Tom, who, as the chief's son and prospective heir, was present at all the sessions, I obtained an inside view of their political, social, and religious life.

The villages were generally organized by the election, common recognition, or selection by the chief of four officers.

1st. Captain of the Warriors; whose duty was to organize and drill the men as soldiers; and, under direction of the chief, lead them in time of war.

2nd. Captain of the Boys; teaching them to make bows and arrows, to hunt, fish, endure fatigue, practice proper self-restraint and etiquette. The boys were generally under severe discipline until old enough, or rather big enough, to be recognized as warriors.

3rd. Superintendent of Works; having charge of industries, such as gardening, collecting and distributing supplies, and involved the temporal prosperity of the village.

4th. Master of Ceremonies. A kind of priest and civil judge, before whom marriages were recognized; difficulties brought for adjustment, except high crimes or appeals, which came before the chief; and by whom funeral ceremonies were conducted.

These four, with the chief, formed a council of state, and were in fact the government. All their services were rendered gratuitously, and as for gaining a livelihood they seemed to have no advantage over the rest.

I noticed that difficulties between villages had been brought about not by any general difference of opinion as to boundaries, etc., but by individual misdoing, shielded by the personal friends of the culprit; which acts, when pointed out, were recognized as wrong, but in no case was there any demand for the punishment of the criminal.

It appeared that the recent war between the Placerville and Columbia villages had originated in a quarrel between two boys, one from each village, both equally wrong, but supported by their friends.

In social life polygamy, though unpopular, was allowed, but it did not appear that any member of the council had more than one wife. There seemed to be a decided sentiment that men and women must be morally above reproach. Perhaps it was because of this that the squaws were associated in bands, and rarely, if ever, seen alone.

All were devoutly religious; or perhaps it were better to say superstitious. Some could recite in Spanish parts of the litany of the Roman Catholic Church, were decorated with crosses, carried beads and *resarios;* but their ideas of God were not different from others who were veritable heathen. They imagined that each village had its individual god, or at least the Indians and whites had different gods; and while possessing wonderful power, the Indians evidently were not sure that any of them were good. They might be propitiated, but might also be very unreasonable and cruel.

They certainly feared their gods. Surrounded by superstitious dread of the unreal, they were ignorant of the real. Trembling before imaginary gods; ignorant of the God of love, their sad lives were made sadder by contact with corrupt men, who by their vices led the masses to terrible and hopeless ruin. Yet in the Indian mind these men were associated with the name and religion of Christ, which greatly perplexed the more intelligent and pure natives.

Chapter 11

RETURN TO WISCONSIN

SATURDAY, June 18, 1853. I visited the post office at Coloma. Many of my most intimate acquaintances had either left California or I had lost their address, and a lonely feeling came over me; and a desire to renew my studies turned my thoughts toward home.

Letters from Wisconsin, especially one from brother Edward D., a student at the University of Wisconsin, stating that during vacation he expected to visit our old home in New York and urging me, if possible, to meet him there, confirmed my desire to return at once.

In a few days my affairs were arranged for the homeward journey. Meeting with Capitan Juan I told him that I was going to New York.

"*¿Cuando quiere volver?*" (When will you return?).

"*No se, quisa nunca*" (Don't know; perhaps never).

"*¿Donde esta Tchubo, su hijo de V.?*" (Where is Tom, your son?).

He replied, "*¿Quien sabe?*" (Who knows?). Then he told me that Tom had been drinking, and was having trouble.

I expressed regret, hoped he might reform, and closed by saying, "*Vuestro merced*" (your excellency), a title of respect with which I always addressed him, "knows that I would be glad to help him reform if I could."

"Yes," he replied, "I respect you, every one in the village respects you; you have been a brother to *Tchubo* (Tom) and he loves you as his best friend and brother; but," he added with deep emotion, "nobody can help him,—*¡Mi pobre hijo perdido! ¡mi pobre hijo perdido!*" (My poor lost son! my poor lost son!).

Our parting was very sad, and as I bade him *Adios*, he gave me an affectionate embrace, and placing his hands upon my head solemnly said, "*Dios te guarde por todos los cominos de V.*" (God keep you in all your ways).

I was much impressed, and wanted to find Tom; at our last interview he had said he did not intend to drink any more, and I wanted to have one more talk with him on the subject, so that when he thought of me he would always remember my desire for his reform.

While crossing the plains in 1850, at the camp of the mountaineer, Jim Baker, I bought a suit of Indian made buckskin. The frock coat, neatly belted and heavily fringed, I had kept as a souvenir, but just before the council, Tom's clothes being somewhat shabby, I gave it to him. It was a good fit, and being of Indian work was more appropriate than any other style of dress. He was greatly pleased with it, and he having pleasant features and fine form, it was much admired.

In my search for Tom I saw several bands of Indians, but not seeing his coat passed them at a distance. At last near Peru, meeting an Indian I inquired in Spanish, "Have you seen the Chief's son?" He replied, pointing in the direction, "Yes, he is down there by the road."

Going to the place, I found him reclining against a fallen tree in a drunken stupor. His buckskin coat and flannel shirt were gone, and even his pantaloons had been exchanged for a torn and ragged pair. Evidently "he had fallen among thieves," who had stripped him of his raiment, etc.

As I looked into his bloated, besotted face, and remembered what he had been, his bright mind, noble ambition, studious habits, and untiring energy before the demon alcohol had done its work, his despairing father's words seemed to ring again in my ears, "*Mi pobre hijo perdido*" (My poor lost son). Tears filled my eyes as I lingered beside him, deplored his ruin, and found it inexpressibly hard to give him up.

Does anyone say, He was only an Indian; yet there were infinite possibilities bound up in his life. And although thousands in all ages have met a similar fate, still sorrow over one is none the less bitter on that account.

Without trying to awaken him, with a silent good-bye I turned away and never saw him again. What became of him I know not; most probably he died a drunkard. However that may be, doubtless in the day of judgment it will be more tolerable for him than for those who lured him to ruin.

Greatly depressed, I returned to my cabin and about dark was cheered by the presence of Mr. Soper, who spent the night with me, and together the next morning we went to Coloma.

Here I learned that an uncle, Mr. B. H. Robinson of Prattsville, New York, who years ago had spent some time in California, had just returned and was at Uniontown, two miles down the river. For awhile I was inclined to change my plan and remain in

California, but as my business interests were arranged I concluded to go on. So bidding good-bye to Soper, who returned to my cabin, and after spending an evening with my uncle, whose family I expected to visit in New York, a stage ride of sixty-two miles brought me to Sacramento, where, taking a steamboat, sometime during the following night I reached San Francisco.

I had planned to sail about the last of June, Monday, the 27th, on the steamer *Sierra Nevada*, and was detained but a single day in the city; but in the early part of that day an incident was added to my experience, which emphasized the adage, "Eternal vigilance is the price of liberty," and other valuable things.

On leaving Uniontown a burly, rather well-dressed man occupied a seat in the stage; we took dinner at the same hotel, and when I purchased a ticket on the steamer for San Francisco, he also was present and obtained one. Though a total stranger, he knew that I had been for some time in the mines and that I was now on my way home.

I was surprised at his knowledge, for I had told him nothing about it, but I supposed he might have overheard the conversation with my uncle the night before, and therefore it excited no suspicion. He was social and pleasant, professed to be well acquainted in San Francisco, and suggested a stopping place; but I had made up my mind to stop at the Atlantic Hotel, as I had been there before. "Yes," said he, "that's a good place, and I'll go with you."

However, there were several Mexicans on the boat, and wishing to improve my Spanish, I spent most of the time during the trip in conversation with them.

At midnight or later our boat reached the wharf, and taking our satchels we started for the hotel. When almost there he invited me up to a lighted room, "to have something to drink."

"No, I want no liquor."

"Then will you be so kind as to wait here until I return?"

I begged to be excused, could be of no special service to him, and was quite ready for sleep. I was surprised in not finding him next morning at the breakfast table; in fact he had not come to the hotel.

Looking over the morning paper, I noticed that the *Sierra Nevada* lying at long wharf, was announced to sail the next day; so, preparatory to the purchase of a ticket, I started for the steamer to select a stateroom. It was early in the forenoon and on a thronged street when I again met the

nger who had accompanied me from
ontown. We recognized each other, and
assing he unawares crowded me against a
r, which was on a level with the sidewalk,
with a sudden push thrust me inside.

nstead of the usual revolver, I carried two
le shooters in a place prepared inside my
t; and, while with my right hand trying
prevent his shutting the outside door,
n my left hand I cocked one, drew it, but
then saw another man standing in a side
r, and as I raised the pistol he disap-
red and shut the door. In an instant I
w the other pistol with my right hand,
n the man who had pushed me in disap-
red through a door on the opposite side
it was shut.

ewildered, I stood for a moment with a
ked pistol in either hand, and on regain-
presence of mind, saw that the room was
about six feet square, but containing
e doors. Coming in from the street there
a door on the right and left, through
ch the men had disappeared.

pproaching the front door, which my
ilant in his haste to get beyond the range
my pistol had failed to close tightly, I
ng it open and stepped out upon the side-
k. Meeting a policeman, I asked him to
st the man who had assaulted me.

"Where is he?" he asked.

"In this house," I replied.

"You can't identify him."

"Yes, he followed me all the way from Uniontown. I can't be mistaken in the man who laid hands on me."

The policeman paid no further attention to my request; so congratulating myself that I was still alive and in possession of my liberty, passage and expense money, I went to long wharf, boarded the steamer, selected a stateroom, and going to the shipping office secured a ticket.

As I reflected on the episode of the morning, the fact that I had been pursued by a robber became apparent, and only instant resort to the pistols saved me from being robbed or worse. The room into which I was so suddenly pushed was evidently a prepared trap, into which the victims who could not be decoyed might be forced. But even with this experience, I had no idea of the actual condition of the city. The city government at that time was entirely in the hands of the saloon element, gamblers, and thugs.

Up to this time more than twelve hundred murders had been known and registered, and there were reasons to believe twice that number had been committed; and yet not a criminal had been brought to justice. Police-men, police courts, officers of all grade were implicated in crime, even to Judge Terry of the United States District Court.

Men absorbed in their business affairs had neglected their duties as citizens and the baser sort had taken possession of the offices, and those whose duty required them to protect the people and the legitimate business of the city became a terror and menace to both. There may have been some well-meaning men in office, but they were too few to exert any influence, and at this time San Francisco was governed by criminals and the people lived in fear.

A few months later the editor of the *Evening Bulletin*, James King, published an article which displeased a prominent official, and was deliberately shot down at noonday in a busy thoroughfare, the murderer making no effort at concealment, so confident was he that no court in the city would convict him. There was a veritable reign of terror; with life and property at stake, men were afraid to offend the officials, and at the same time dared not trust each other.

At this time many citizens of San Francisco regarded its government as hopeless, not only the offices but the ballot boxes being in unworthy hands. To avoid collision with the officials and endure what they seemed powerless to remedy was the best they could expect.

But there was another class who attended strictly to their own business, and were desirous that others should do the same. Patiently enduring evils while they were endurable, if compelled to suspend their business operations in order to chastise evil doers, they were not embarrassed as to methods; doing it quietly, effectively, and with the least expenditure of time. Possibly at this date California had a greater number of this class in proportion to its population than any other state.

When through the deliberate murder of James King it became evident that citizens were compelled to defend themselves even against officials, and that those whose duty it was to execute justice must be brought to justice, these men calmly considered the situation; and though people were suspicious of each other, the movement proceeded with such care that the best elements of society, not only in San Francisco but in other parts of the state, were united, organized as a vigilance committee, with plan of work and necessary preparation.

When all was ready, many men from other parts of the state quietly entered San Francisco and at a preconcerted moment most of the city officials were arrested; the armory opened, and arms distributed to the already organized citizen soldiers; redoubts built of sacks filled with sand; cannon mounted, trusty guards placed on duty as police; and finally courts were convened and the offenders placed on trial.

Of course the Governor called out the state militia; but it not being well organized, those who were interested generally joined the Vigilantes, leaving him powerless. For once there was government of the people, by the people, and for the people.

Meantime, the improvised courts completed their work. Some of the prisoners were executed; some were allowed to leave the state under promise never to return; and certain officials, against whom there was only suspicion, were permitted to resume office.

When the work was completed the sandbag forts and cannon were removed, the state arms put in good condition and restored to the armory, all office keys delivered to the proper officials, and then the committees adjourned and retired to their respective homes.

Should it be necessary, the citizens in their organized strength could promptly reassemble; but their work had been so well done there was no such need, and for years after that outburst of popular indignation perhaps no city was as well governed as San Francisco.

Returning homeward, it was my intention to land at Acapulco on the west coast of Mexico, and taking the national road, visit the capital; thence to some port on the Gulf, whence, after seeing something of that very interesting country and its people, I could ship for New York. But the day we sailed from San Francisco the morning papers announced that General Santa Anna had dissolved the Mexican congress by military force, and that the country was in the throes of revolution.

This made me regret my plan, especially when I found a Mexican among the passengers who said he had personal letters confirming the report. He was bitterly opposed to Santa Anna and gave many instances of his treachery to the Mexican government, expressing the opinion that he was plotting the downfall of the Republic and the establishment of a monarchy upon its ruins.

The cabin and deck of an ocean steamer afford unusual facilities for people to become acquainted. I soon discovered that there were on board men from many interesting parts of the world; and by approaching such in a quiet questioning way, in some secluded corner, much that was instructive and entertaining might be learned.

Among the passengers was an Irishman named O'Donohue, who, with Thomas F. Meagher and others, having rebelled against the English government, were tried for treason and banished to Van Diemen's Land; but making his escape, reached San Francisco in an American vessel, and was now on his way to New York.

Monday, July 4, was celebrated at sea, and O'Donohue being orator of the day, portrayed the perfidy of England, the wrongs of Ireland, the rise and fall of the rebellion, his trial, banishment, and escape to a ship flying the United States' flag, which he asserted was the only flag in the world that could give him protection.

A splendid dinner was served and I noticed that many of the passengers drank to excess, and there was revelry and confusion in the cabins. Retiring early to my stateroom to avoid the noise and drunken men, although the sea was calm, hours passed before slumber came to my relief.

Shortly after midnight, aroused by the intense heat of my room, I hastily dressed and sought the deck. Most of the revelers had become quiet, but as I looked out on the quarter deck it was evident that the officer in command was too drunk to attend to any duty.

Attracted to the door of the engine room by the boisterous mirth of the engineer and his assistant, the view was not assuring. The place was overheated, and the machinery evidently laboring under a tremendous strain. On the stairway leading down to the furnaces stood a man who seemed to be in command of the coal heavers, shouting occasionally, "Shove her up there. Don't let the fire go out. Turn on the draft," etc.

The heat was intense, and the men, clearly under the inspiration of strong drink, were doing their best, but there was something frightful in the red glare of the fires, and the ponderous machinery in rapid motion made the great ship, over three hundred feet long, tremble from end to end.

Slowly ascending to the upper deck, pausing a moment at the door of my room to find its heat insufferable, I found a company of passengers, who, like myself, had been driven from their rooms by the heat which pervaded the central part of the ship.

We were somewhere west or south of Cape San Lucas and had plenty of sea room, and as for accidents—boiler explosion, breakage of machinery, or the ship taking fire, whatever might happen—we could only do the best possible according to events and conditions. But I would have felt much safer on land, or on a ship controlled by sane men. However, lying on a bench under the star-gemmed sky, I slept uneasily until morning. Grateful that we had been preserved from accident and glad that the celebration was over and a sober crew again in charge of the ship, I sought my stateroom, now cooled off and very comfortable, and during the remainder of the voyage experienced no inconvenience from heat.

Reaching Acapulco, where our vessel stopped a short time, I learned from the American consul that a division of Santa Anna's army was encamped near the city, that all coaches had been removed from the national road, and that private travel, even if possible, would be extremely dangerous. So, returning to the steamer, I concluded to go by way of Central America.

Nearing the west coast of Nicaragua, between two mountain-like promontories our steamer entered a small bay at the head of which was the town of *San Juan del Sur* (St. John of the South). There was no wharf, the ship anchored, and the passengers and baggage were sent part way in boats, and were met by natives, who, wading through the water, carried them on their shoulders to dry ground.

Seated on the brawny shoulders of a Zambo (a person of Indian and negro blood) while another carried my satchel, I was borne high and dry through the surf.

I inquired, "How much do you charge?"

"One dime each."

My smallest change was a five franc silver piece, current at ninety-five cents. Handing it to one, I remarked: "You must both take your pay out of that."

Without thought of seeing either of them again, I went some distance to a corral to obtain a mule, and just before starting for Virgin Bay on Lake Nicaragua one of the men brought me the exact change; fifty cents in coin, two pieces of soap at ten cents each, and a cake of chocolate at five cents.

I mention this as an evidence of the honesty of these people, and also to call attention to the fact that articles of merchandise rather than coins were used as money. Buying two cents worth of bananas, I gave the five cent cake of chocolate, receiving in change three rows of pins at one cent a row, these current articles being always accepted without complaint. The only inconvenience, you needed a basket instead of a purse in which to carry your change.

From San Juan del Sur to Virgin Bay was twelve miles, first ascending a steep mountain ridge and then by a gradual descent to the lake, where we arrived late in the afternoon. The expected boats to take us down the lake had not arrived, and the principal hotel being overcrowded, several of us were directed to another, where in broken English we were very cordially welcomed by the proprietor, an elderly Spaniard.

While making a hurried tour through the village, night came with scarcely a warning of twilight. However, a weird light reflected from the mists around the crest of a volcano on the island of Ometepe, in the lake, enabled me to find the way to my hotel.

Now the town seemed more populous than by day. Lights were hung out and the verandas were thronged with merry, laughing, talking, singing groups. At one place under an archway of bamboo, supporting a roof of palm leaves, a large company of ladies and gentlemen were engaged in a dance. As it was near the street, I paused a few minutes, listening to the lively music of the guitar and tambourine and watching the strange yet graceful movements of the dancers.

The gentlemen wore a row of metallic buttons on the outside of their pantaloons from the knee down, and the usual buttoned and braided Spanish jacket. The ladies with dark skirt and bright colored basque, some with a slight, turban-shaped band around the head, but most of them bareheaded; their black hair tastefully arranged in heavy braids, and studded with what seemed the most brilliant gems. Returning to my hotel, I told the landlord about the dance and the profuse display of gems. With a dignified smile he replied:

"They are not real gems, but lantern flies, which the ladies at night pin in their hair."

"But is not that very cruel?"

"O, no," said he, "they do not stick the pin into the fly; only fix it so as to bind the fly in place, and when set at liberty it flies away unhurt."

Our hotel furnished no printed bill of fare, but at supper our host came into the dining room and politely announced, "Bread, yams, chicken, eggs," and various other things difficult to remember, closing with, "tea coffee, and chocolate; all or part as you have choice."

I could not remember having tasted chicken since entering California, and very naturally had an appetite for it. But when brought, it had little to remind me of chicken,—perhaps I had forgotten,—slightly resembling certain parts of wild fowl, but this had been skinned, not picked. Still, trying to make allowance for latitude and cooking, I almost persuaded myself that it was delicious chicken until an attendant, who spoke only Spanish, entered, and I inquired of him, "*¿Se llame pollo esto?*" (Do you call this chicken?).

"*No, Señor, se llama mono, ¿esta bien, no?*" (No sir, it is called monkey, very good, is it not?).

Coming over the ridge from San Juan del Sur, I had seen them by the roadside, swinging on the branches of trees and chattering as we passed; but the idea of having one served for supper never entered my mind, and certainly failed to give relish to my evening meal.

The hotel was a bamboo structure roofed with palm leaves and partitioned with the same material. My bedroom was quite small, with a hammock suspended diagonally, about three feet from the floor.

Unaccustomed to such a bed, I found some difficulty in keeping properly balanced; and instead of the regular throb of the machinery, to which I had become used on board the ship, I could distinctly feel the tremble of the ground and hear the rumble and boom of the volcano on an island in the lake; while the vapor above the mountain, probably reflecting the fires of the crater, looked like an immense flame.

Falling into a sound sleep, toward morning I waked to find myself on the matted floor. The room was dark; everything seemed in motion; and mingled with the thunders of the volcano came the roar of waters, as the surf is rolled upon the rocks by the incoming tide. It seemed as though Lake Nicaragua was overwhelming the town.

Seeing a light in the office, bewildered, frightened, and but half-dressed, I peered in. There sat the proprietor, holding a lighted candle in his hand, and smoking a cigarette.

I exclaimed: "*¿Señor, que es esta?*" (Sir, what is this?).

Calmly he replied: "*Nada sino tierra temblor*" (Nothing but an earthquake).

His calmness allayed my fears, and entering into conversation, I learned that for several days the volcano had been unusually active, and only a few minutes before, there was a severe earthquake shock; and I suppose it was this that caused me to fall from my hammock. Daylight revealed the lake in great agitation, and although it seemed at its usual level, we could see where a wave had swept the lower part of the town, doing some damage to the bamboo buildings, though I think no lives were lost.

During the forenoon a steamboat came up the lake from San Carlos, but as there was no proper wharf it could not approach the shore, and the only way of getting on board was by means of a lighter; a boat made of iron plates riveted together, like a steam boiler, with hollow, water-tight sides, which prevented it from capsizing or sinking; and there was not much danger of its breaking against the rocks. This was brought to a rocky point, and as the wave carried it up nearly level with the top of the rock those who were ready jumped in; the receding wave carried the boat out into the lake and it was rowed to the steamboat, where, leaving its passengers, it returned for another load.

While this was in operation a deeply affecting incident occurred. At another point about twenty rods from the boat-landing a boy, said to be seven or eight years old, a native of the town, walked down the shelving rocks to a point washed by the waves. An alligator from some place near by came suddenly upon him, cutting off his retreat. With frantic gestures and screams he appealed for help, but before assistance could be given he was seized, and both boy and alligator disappeared beneath the waters of the lake.

These reptiles, called by the natives *Caymans*, are very numerous in this country, some growing to a length of eighteen feet, and are found along the lakes and streams, often lying on the bank of the river or lake, their bodies accommodated to the curve of the bank and their head resting on a level with the water. Their strong jaws, red inside and adorned with rows of white teeth, seemed to open and shut like a pair of shears.

When the passengers were all on board, our little boat steamed out near the island of Ometepe, said to be about twenty miles long north and south and about seven wide. The volcano is rather north of the center, but the whole island was so enveloped in mist or steam, in many places descending to the water, that it resembled a vast cloud resting upon the lake, from the center of which came the heavy rumble of the volcano, like the roar of a distant thunder storm.

In the afternoon we reached the outlet of the lake, and source of the San Juan River, which flows into the Caribbean Sea. Here the recent earthquake, by raising a bar across the outlet of the lake, not only prevented our boat from going farther, but by shutting off the usual flow of water, for a time greatly interfered with the navigation of the river. This, however, enabled me to visit the old town and fort of San Carlos. The village occupied a beautiful highland overlooking both lake and river; but the houses were the usual low, bamboo, palm-leaf-covered style common to this country.

The fort, once commanding the lake shore and outlet, built of stone, with a moat about ten feet wide, was a mass of ruins. To all appearance the wreck had been wrought by an explosion many years ago. Many beautiful brass or bronze cannon were mixed in or underlying the demolished walls.

Near the ruined fort was a long shed used as barracks by a company of soldiers. Clothed in pantaloons and jacket of unbleached sheeting, barefoot, but wearing a small Panama hat, and armed with heavy Austrian muskets, their appearance was rather grotesque than military. However, what was lacking in the dress and uniform of subalterns and privates was amply made up by the commissioned officers, who were brilliant in bright colors, gold lace, and polished leather. And probably there was the same contrast in their pay.

After a delay of about twenty-four hours two small scow-like boats were brought up, to which we transferred, and floated down to the head of Castillo Rapids. Going around these on foot, we stopped for the night at the little hamlet of Castillo. At this transfer a highly prized gift from my old Indian friend Capitan Juan, which, neatly boxed, I had kept with special care, was stolen.

While coming down the river I greatly admired the forest scenery on either bank and was glad to get ashore, anticipating a stroll among the beautiful trees; but it was a case where

"Distance lends enchantment to the view."

It was impossible to take a single step from the beaten path. Prickly vines were so closely interlaced that it would be necessary to cut them at the ground, overhead, on both sides, and even then, the great, green, thorny vines would bar your way in front.

The next morning the journey was continued down the San Juan on a small steamboat. Just below the mouth of the San Carlos, a large tributary from the south, a short stop was made at Ochoa, in the republic of Costa Rica, and amid swarms of alligators and the most beautiful and wonderful vegetation, with enough rain every day to keep it fresh and clean; at last, passing the low corals at the mouth of the river, our little boat began to rise and fall on the swells that rolled in from the Caribbean Sea and soon glided safely into the bay of San Juan del Norte, or Greytown.

The steamship *Northern Light* lay at anchor in the bay, and we were taken on board and soon settled cozy enough on this floating palace. It was not so large as the *Sierra Nevada*, which had brought us from San Francisco, but in form and finish without and within it seemed absolutely perfect.

It was late in the afternoon when we came on board, and I was greatly pleased at being permitted to accompany an officer of the ship to town. However, our stay was too brief to obtain more than a glimpse of one of the main streets. There were some quite large buildings, but most of the houses were of the usual pattern seen in this country—bamboo, thatched with palm leaves.

After supper, with several of the passengers, I asked the privilege of again being taken ashore, but the officer explained that it would not be well for us to go in the evening; if, however, a boat load of passengers expected from the Pacific Coast, did not arrive during the night there would be an opportunity for us to go in the morning.

He said there was some misunderstanding between the republic of Nicaragua and the United States. A man-of-war had been sent to protect our interests, and soon after a British warship arrived, perhaps to see fair play, but more probably for the reason that at that time the neighboring so-called Mosquito Reserve was under the protectorate of England; and it was not until 1894 that it was reincorporated with the republic of Nicaragua.

Of course the Passenger Line was careful not to give any occasion for trouble.

Some time after this Senator Borland was sent by the United States government to adjust matters, but a misunderstanding arose between him and the governor of Nicaragua which induced Borland to take shelter on the American man-of-war. From this he endeavored to renew negotiations, but the governor was now on his dignity and refused further parley. All efforts failed to elicit a reply. At last Lieutenant Ingrahm, commanding the man-of-war, sent a formal demand for a reply within a specified time, under penalty of firing on the town.

There was a fort on a point north of Greytown; but a vessel near enough to bombard the town from the south would probably be out of the range of its guns.

As the time approached Lieutenant Ingrahm brought his ship into position and signaled his readiness to begin, and when the time expired without response, he opened fire, demolishing the houses within his range, and then, sending a boat's crew ashore, burned the ruins.

The inhabitants had ample warning and probably few, if any, were killed, but their property was destroyed without accomplishing any good. It was a cowardly act of war, and surely a discredit to the nation.[8]

The window of my stateroom looked out upon the town, and the wide array of lights made it appear larger by night than by day, while the phosphorescent flash of the tropical waves rolling in the distance resembled a sea of fire.

Wearied with the day's journey, under the influence of the weird lights and soft night air I fell into a profound sleep, and did not wake until sunrise. Noticing the tremble of the ship and the regular throb of the machinery, I looked from my window and instead of the town saw only the wide expanse of ocean.

It was difficult to realize how deep my slumber had been. The expected passengers had arrived, anchor had been weighed, the

---

[8] A résumé of the Nicaraguan dispute and the bombardment of Greytown may be found in Theodore C. Smith's *Parties and Slavery, 1850–1859* (New York, 1906), 88–93. Our author had no first-hand knowledge of the affair and his account of it is inadequate in several respects.

Index

Index

A —, ——, charity of miners toward, 284–85.
Acapulco, Steele visits, 337.
Ague, rarity of in California, 14.
Alligator, devours child, 343–44.
Almoden, mines of, 110.
Alvarado, Governor, Governor of California, 71, 76; leads insurrection, 99–101.
Amador, Don José Maria, ranch of, 70.
American Fur Company, trading post visited, 27; William L. Sublette opposes, 34.
American Ranch, miners visit, 186, 188.
American River, as logging stream, 107; miners cross, 205; operations on, 206, 213–14, 228; climate, 218–19.
Amputation, of leg, described, 276–77.
Anderson, ——, murdered, 270.
Antelopes, emigrants kill, 63.
Antoine Cañon, mining enterprise, 308–10.
Ash Hollow, site of emigrant camp, 26.
Ashley, General, partner in fur trade, 34.
Atlantic Hotel, gold seekers put up at, 210; Steele stops at, 328.
Bacon, as antidote for poison, 129.
Badgely, James, expedition to Antoine Cañon, 308–10.
Baker, ——, member of emigrant party, 25.
Barker, Elijah, career narrated, 260–63.
Barker, James, as slaveholder, 260–63.
Bartleson, ——, elected captain of emigrant train, 22; sells alcohol to trappers, 35; hostility toward Bidwell, 48; criticized, 49–50; abandons emigrants, 54–55; rejoins, 57.

Battéa, use in gold mining, 98–99.
Bear Lake, source of Bear River, 27.
Bear River, route of emigrants via, 27, 39, 44; gold discovered, 98.
Bees, wild, in Platte Purchase, 9–10.
Berry, John, expedition to Antoine Cañon, 308–10.
Bidwell, John, career sketched, xi–xv; journey from Ohio to Iowa, 5–6; from Iowa to Missouri, 7–10; visits St. Louis, 10–11; claim jumped, 12; organizes California party, 14–15, 20–21; journey to California, 22–65; detained by oxen, 39–42, 46–48, 54; criticizes Captain Bartleson, 49, 54; seeks passage through mountains, 58–62; discovers Calaveras Grove, 61; visits Livermore Valley, 69–70; passport difficulties, 72–73; visits Sutter's Fort, 73–75; sojourn at Fort Ross and Fort Bodega, 79–80; gold-discovery project, 97–99; failure, 102; share in revolt against Governor Micheltorena, 101–102; hunts for gold, 102–103, 109; employed by John A. Sutter, 103.
Bighorn sheep, habitat of, 33.
Big Meadows, miners pass, 172–74, 178–79.
Big Sandy River, route of emigrants via, 27.
Billiard table, first in California, 93.
Blackfeet Indians, emigrants fear, 41.
Black Fork, route of emigrants via, 27.
Bonneville, Benj. E. L., career sketched, 66.
Borland, Senator, U. S. diplomatic agent, 348.
Boston, early trade with California, 89, 99.
Bowers, Zachary, Steele visits, 145.
Bowen, Thomas, befriends Bidwell, 73.
Brannan, Sam, gold weighed, 109.
Bread, made by miners, 157–58.
Brown, Elam, has map of California, 16.
Buck Eye Ranch, miners visit, 199.
Buffaloes, emigrants encounter, 30; numbers, 31; oxen join, 32; disappearance of, 33; Indians kill, 49.

Buffalo grass, described, 32.

Burlington, Bidwell visits, 6; capital of Iowa Territory, 7.

Burt, ——, feud over ownership of mine, 264–67.

CALAVERAS Grove, Bidwell discovers, 61.

Calaveras River, Steele visits, 251.

California, first overland party to, xi–xii; residence of Bidwell, xii–xv; emigration fever roused, 13–14; Emigration Society organized, 14–15; ignorance concerning route, 15–16, 23, 38–39, 42–45, 50–65; experiences of T. J. Farnham, 16–20; character of early Americans, 18–19, 88–89; journey of first overland train, 21–65; drought of 1841, 67; lack of physicians, 67, 90–92; hospitality of Spanish element, 83–85, 247; native carts described, 85–86; early commerce, 89, 99; scarcity of lawyers, 92; discovery of gold, 95–111; Frémont's first visit, 104–105; election of 1851, 226; characteristics of Spanish element, 237–48; hostility between, and Americans, 251–52.

California cat, as pet, 292–93.

Callanan, ——, at Klamath mines, 207.

Callanan, Dr. ——, treats Steele, 130.

Callanan, Henry, member of overland party, 119; of Klamath enterprise, 200.

Callanan, John, member of overland party, 119; of Klamath enterprise, 200.

Campbell, Robert, partner in fur trade, 34.

Cañon Creek, miners camp on, 161.

Cañonville, mining camp, 150.

Capitan Juan, son slain, 234; reports smallpox visitation, 249; presents gift to Steele, 259–60; tragedy of son, 293–305, 323–26; invites Steele to attend council, 313.

Carson Lake, emigrants reach, 57.

Carson River, emigrants cross, 56; route via, 277.

Carts, of California, described, 85–86.

Castillero, ——, discovers quicksilver, 109–110.

ponderous engines started, and the parting signal fired without even disturbing my rest.

Hastily dressing and going on deck, the merest trace of land lay off in the direction of the Mosquito Coast; on all other sides the horizontal line was an equal blending of sea and sky.

Sea voyages and life on ship board, in their daily routine, though interesting, have been described so often that I leave out all but a few special items.

After leaving Greytown, for several days the sea was very rough, with an occasional squall and dash of rain. While on deck one afternoon three waterspouts appeared, one quite near and coming toward the ship. A dark mass of cloud arched us like a frowning cliff, and the column of water which connected it with the sea seemed running downward rather than upward, as in pictures they had appeared to my boyish fancy.

Presently all passengers were ordered below and the hatches battened down. Just as I started down the companion way, lightning rent the main mast to splinters and sent the rigging, spars, and pulleys flying in the wind across the deck. Several men in the gangway were prostrated by the electric shock; the two engineers sprang from the engine room, which, as I looked inside through the open door, seemed a mass of flame. The door was instantly closed, but the passengers raised the cry, "Fire! fire! the ship is on fire!"

Some fainted, many became wild with terror. Screams, prayers, sobs, and even curses emphasized the confusion. Standing on the lower steps of the companion way, like one in a dream, I surveyed the scene.

The motion of the ship, the roar of the floods, the waters trickling through every seam, indicated that we were in the grip of the hurricane; and considering the storm without and the fire within, escape for awhile seemed hopeless; and with the rest I believed the ship would be lost.

However, the crew under the direction of competent officers was at work; and in a few minutes men were ready with a large hose attached to a steam pump to put out the flames. The engine room door was opened; dense volumes of smoke rolled out, but no fire was found within. The closed doors and water filled seams had smothered it; but along one side the dry, oil soaked wood, charred and blackened, showed how intense the fire had been.

In about two hours the hurricane was over, the wreckage of the mast had been cleared away, and with feelings of safety and of gratitude to God we were permitted again to pace the deck.

A rough sea and an occasional squall broke the monotony of the voyage as we sailed out of the Caribbean Sea and across a corner of the Gulf of Mexico. Stopping a short time at Havana, our good ship in due time entered the Gulf Stream, probably the greatest river in the world, with its warm-water current and cold-water banks. We encountered the usual gale off Cape Hatteras, and one beautiful, calm, moonlight night sailed into the harbor of New York.

Two days afterward, crossing the Catskill Mountains, I visited the family of my uncle, B. H. Robinson, at Prattsville; and a week later started to visit several cousins of my father, who owned and conducted a boarding academy in a country place named after the proprietors, Fergusonville. By stage from Prattsville, I reached the nearest village, East Davenport, about 7 P. M., and put up at the hotel, intending to visit Fergusonville, three miles distant, the next morning.

While supper was in preparation the landlord informed me that there would be some delay, as more than twenty girls from the school had arrived and requested supper. Contrary to the rules, they were out on a lark, and had come on foot, part way through the woods, expecting to be back before they were missed. With the landlord and his wife, I joined them at the table; and for awhile they were certainly the wildest, giddiest, merriest company I ever saw.

When supper was nearly over, one ran to the door and returning, exclaimed:

"O, girls! it is raining!" and a dozen voices answered, "O, what shall we do?" And the light and music and cheer faded out of some twenty happy hearts.

It rained all night, and the next morning the landlord provided conveyances and the penitent company returned to school. While their enterprise amounted to much more than they had anticipated, still it was not a success according to their expectations.

Visiting the school, I spent the day with Rev. Samuel D. and Sanford I. Ferguson, warden and principal of the school, and their families. The school officials were solving the perplexing problem how most kindly to deal with so many guilty of such a grievous disregard of discipline, and yet maintain the dignity of the school. The mystery of school discipline, like all other mysteries, is manifest in its results. So far as I could judge every person connected with the school was as busy and happy as though nothing unusual had happened.

The campus embraced about three hundred acres, and the pupils were nearly all from large cities. In coming or returning they were always accompanied by some responsible person. Arriving at the school, they enjoyed greater liberty than would be possible in village or city. Outdoor exercise, the country air, life and influence of the Christian home, and the absence of all corrupting influences made it a desirable place for young people, and many who lived in cities were willing to pay almost any price that their children might enjoy the benefits of that school.

At Walton village I met with Brother Edward, and after a few weeks among the friends and haunts of our early boyhood, returned to Wisconsin, reaching Lodi in the early days of September, 1853, after an absence of about three and a half years. Years of some financial profit; not wasted as regards intellectual improvement; of considerable value in personal experience; and more than ever anxious to take up my suspended studies, and, if possible, realize my cherished dream of becoming thoroughly fitted for the work of an educator.

But the boy who penned the preceding pages had just passed his twenty-first year; boyhood had given place to manhood; *In*

Camp and Cabin is part of the record of his lost youth, and his feelings found expression in the words of Longfellow's minor strain, "My Lost Youth."

And thus,

"my youth comes back to me,
And a verse of a Lapland song
Is haunting my memory still:
'A boy's will is the wind's will,
And the thoughts of youth are long, long thoughts.'

There are things of which I may not speak;
There are dreams that cannot die;
There are thoughts that make the strong heart weak,
And bring a pallor into the cheek,
And a mist before the eye
And the words of that fatal song
Come over me like a chill:
'A boy's will is the wind's will,
And the thoughts of youth are long, long thoughts.'"

Castillo Rapids, travelers pass, 345.

Castro, José, leads insurrection, 99–101; visits John A. Sutter, 109–10.

Cattle, rearing, in early California, 70, 238–45; trade in hides, 89–90, 247–48.

Century Magazine, publishes Bidwell's narrative, xv.

Chapman, George, expedition to Antoine Cañon, 308–10.

Chapman, Levi, expedition to Antoine Cañon, 308–10.

Cheny, John, on Feather River expedition, 157, 159.

Cheyenne Indians, scare emigrant, 28–30; hunting habits, 30.

Chico, *Advertiser*, publishes Bidwell's narrative, xv.

Chico, Guadalupe, daughter of Jesus Chico, 238, 246.

Chico, Hernando, son of Jesus Chico, 238; journey to Los Angeles, 238–48.

Chico, Jesucita, daughter of Jesus Chico, 238, 246.

Chico, Jesus, befriended by Steele, 224–25; Steele visits, 237–48.

Chilenos, feud between, and American miners, 264–67.

Chili Bar, miner murdered, 270; miners pass, 280.

Chimney Rock, emigrants pass, 27, 33.

Church service, in mines, described, 306–308.

Clark, Peter F., partner of Steele, 228–30, 232–33; returns to Missouri, 236; acquaintance with Elijah Barker, 260.

Clear Lake, Bidwell visits, 80.

Coast Range Mountains, emigrants view, 62.

Coloma, gold discovered, 97; Steele visits, 227–28, 248; scenes at post office, 305.

Colubrine; in miners' cabins, 288–89.

Columbia County (Wis.), home of Steele, xv, 120.

Columbia Ranch, Pah Ute Indian village, 234–35; smallpox epidemic, 249–51, 259–60; as miners, 286–87; see also Thomas and Capitan Juan.

Consumption, western journey as cure, 16–17, 274.

Contra Costa County, first settlement in, 67.

Cooledge, ——, grocer, 296.
Court House Rocks, emigrants pass, 27, 32–33.
Coyotes, emigrants eat, 63.
Coyote Ridge, mining operations on, 203.
Cremation, practiced by Pah Ute Indians, 250.
Crows, eaten by emigrants, 60.
Cuyama Creek, route via, 242.
Cyclone, emigrants encounter, 32.
DANIELS, ——, California venture narrated, 134–37.
Davis, Abijah, Steele visits, 145.
Davis, Colonel, affair narrated, 253–56.
Davis, Jefferson, pretended brother, 253–56.
Dawson, "Cheyenne," scared by Indians, 28–30; hunts oxen, 46.
Deer, emigrants kill, 63.
Deer Creek, miners pass, 199; conflagration begins on, 201.
Deer Creek Water Company, operations of, 203.
De Smet, Rev. Pierre Jean, career sketched, 24; characterized, 25–26; emigrants separate from, 38.
Dickey, William, first owner of Rancho Chico, xiii.
Digg, ——, trading post visited, 104.
Digger Indians, origin of name, 315–16.
Dinkler, Fred, employs Steele, 140; rascality of, 145–48.
Dobin, Jeremiah, experience with snake, 288–89.
Donnelley, John, member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121; illness, 144, 149; expedition to Feather River, 151–202; departure for Klamath mines, 204; American River enterprise, 206, 213–24; Steele visits, 231.
Donner Lake, emigrants camp near, 87.
Dougherty, ——, rancher, 70.
Downie's Diggings, miners visit, 161, 162.
Downieville, mining camp, 154, 156.
Downing's Ravine, Steele returns to cabin, 249, 313; operations at, 232–33, 308; Steele winters at, 279; religious service, 306–308.

Dowson, Thomas, member of overland party, 120.
Dutch Creek, miners pass, 280.
Dutch Flat, experience on, narrated, 280–81.
EARTHQUAKE, at Virgin Bay, described, 341–42.
East Walton (N. Y.), Steele's visit narrated, 352–53.
England, designs on California, 100.
FALLON, Tom, relates gold discovery, 104.
Farley, Drury, member of overland party, 119; Yuba River enterprise, 142–44; friend ill, 144–45, 150; Poorman's Creek enterprise, 199; Klamath mines enterprise, 204; visits brother, 205; American River enterprise, 206, 213–24.
Farnham, Thomas J., western expedition of, 16–20.
Feather River, gold discovered, 109; mining company organized, 144; Steele's venture on, 151–202.
Ferguson, Rev. Samuel D., conducts academy, 352–54.
Ferguson, Sanford I., conducts academy, 352–54.
Fergusonville (N. Y.), Steele visits relatives, 352–54.
Fevers, rarity of in California, 14.
Finney, Thomas, partner in Texas Bar enterprise, 268, 273–80.
Fitzpatrick, Capt. Thomas, Rocky Mountain trader, 24; knowledge of Indians, 27; averts panic, 28–29; discovery of South Pass, 34; emigrants separate from, 38.
Flathead Indians, Father De Smet as missionary to, 25.
Fleas, afflict miners, 275.
Forbes, Alexander, organizes mining company, 110.
Ford, John, companion of Steele, 251–58.
Ford, Rebecca, wife of Steele, xvii.
Fort Bodega, Sutter buys, 77; dismantles, 77–80.
Fort Hall, sites identified, 37.
Fort Laramie, emigrants pass, 27.
Fort Ross, Sutter buys, 77; dismantles, 77–80.
Fort Vancouver, Hudson's Bay Company post, 37.
France, designs on California, 100.

Frémont, John C., leads Bear Flag revolt, xiii; explores Great Salt Lake, 16; names Humboldt River, 51; first visit to California, 104–105.

Fruit, at California missions, 84.

Frye, Amos E., abandons emigrant train, 38.

GAMBLING, among miners, 131–32, 188–89, 230–31, 268–73, 311; houses promote lawlessness, 200.

Gila River, trail to California via, 13.

Gilroy, origin of name, 88.

Gold, discovery of in California, 95–111; miners gamble, 131–32, 188–89, 200–202, 230–31, 268–73, 311; sickness among, 151; sluice washing described, 203–204; rocker, 214–15; mining regulations adopted, 217–18; hazards of mining, 220–24; operations at Snyder's Bar, 229–33; at Texas Bar, 268–82; feud at Spanish Flat, 264–67; generosity of miners, 284–85.

Graham, Isaac, excites hostility of Spanish authorities, 17–19.

Grain, harvesting on Sutter's ranch described, 82–83.

Grant, Capt. James, commands Fort Hall, 39.

Grass Valley, miners visit, 198.

Gray, Asa, friend of Bidwell, xiv.

Gray, John, parleys with Indians, 29; hunts buffaloes, 30; seeks trappers, 35.

Great Salt Lake, ignorance concerning, 15–16; route of emigrants via, 27, 38, 42–44.

Green River, emigrants cross, 27, 35–36.

Greybacks, visitation described, 213.

Greytown, visit of Steele to, 346–47; bombarded, 348–49.

Grizzly bears, emigrants fear, 40–41; Steele endangered, 139–40.

Grove, ——, Georgia slaveholder, 261–63; feud over ownership of mine, 264–67.

Gutierrez, Pablo, discovers gold, 97–99, 102; hanged, 102.

Hall, William, murdered, 290.
Hamilton, Prof., narrates story of Dr. Y——, 310–13.
Ham's Fork, route of emigrants via, 27.
Hanford, James, friend of Steele, 253.
Hanford, William S., friend of Steele, 253.
Hangtown, origin of name, 268; crimes of violence at, 268–73.
Hanna, Adolphus, befriends miners, 205.
Harney, Gen. Wm. S., establishes Vancouver Barracks 37.
Hastings, ——, first lawyer in California, 92; plans republic, 93; anecdote, 93–94.
Hayes, Jim, employed by Steele, 127; poisoned, 128.
Hooker, Sir Joseph, friend of Bidwell, xiv.
Hooper, ——, Boston merchant, 89.
Horses, Americans steal, 19; Indians steal, 62.
Horse Thief Indians, raid Californians, 62, 70; imprisoned, 72–73.
Hotchkiss, General, explains liquor regulations, 303.
Hudson's Bay Company, trappers in California, 18; maintains Fort Vancouver, 37; post visited, 49; trapper discovers gold, 95.
Hughes, Abraham, member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121.
Hughes, Isaiah J., member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121.
Humboldt Mountains, emigrants traverse, 53.
Humboldt River, route of emigrants via, 51–56.
Hunt, Thomas, member of overland party, 119; reports death of Anderson Tade, 150; Poorman's Creek enterprise, 199–200; Klamath enterprise, 204; visits brother, 205; American River enterprise, 206, 213–24.
Huntsville, Bidwell visits, 7.
Hurricane, described, 350–51.
Indians, scare emigrant, 28–30; emigrants fear, 28, 41; hunting habits, 30; attack trappers, 35; encountered 49, 57, 61, 64, 169–72, 174–76, 178–82; example of

honesty among, 53; steal horses, 62, 70; employed by John A. Sutter, 81–83; talk Spanish, 249; smallpox visitation, 249–51, 259; as swimmers, 275–76; as miners, 286; tragedy of Thomas narrated, 293–305, 323–26; council described, 313–20; debauched by liquor, 302–305, 324–26. See also the several tribes.

Independence Rock, emigrants pass, 27.

Independence Landing, Bidwell visits, 21.

Ingrahm, Lieutenant, bombards Greytown, 348–49.

Iowa City, becomes capital of Iowa, 7; State Capitol Building at, 7.

Iowa County (Wis.), residence of gold seekers, 119.

Irving, Washington, edits Captain Bonneville's narrative, 66.

JACKRABBITS, habitat, 43.

Jackson, attempted lynching at, 254–56.

Jackson County (Mo.), Bidwell visits, 20–21.

Jefferson, mining camp, 143.

Jennings, ——, proprietor of Sacramento, 205.

Jimines, ——, relative of Jesus Chico, 241–42.

Joaquin, ——, Mexican desperado, 256–58; crimes of band, 291.

Johns, James, adventure narrated, 39–42; exploit in Sierra Nevada Mountains, 58–60; at Sutter's Fort, 75.

Jones, Anson, employs Steele, 124–27.

Jordan, David Starr, friend of Bidwell, xiv.

KANAKA Bar, origin of name, 229.

Kansas City, old name of, 21, 26.

Kelsey, residence of Peg Leg Smith, 276.

Kelsey, Benjamin, perseveres in California project, 38; leads emigrants, 58.

Kelsey Cañon, Indians kill white man, 235; mining operations, 287.

Kennedy, Annie, wife of Bidwell, xiv.

Keytesville (Mo.), Bidwell visits, 8.

King, James, murdered, 331; consequences of, 332.

Kingsbury, William, member of overland party, 120.

Klamath, visit to mines planned, 200–201; departure for, 204; project abandoned, 212–13.

Land, claim jumped, 12, 264–67.

Lantern flies, as feminine adornments, 340.

Larkin, Thomas O., California career, 89, 91.

Lawson, ——, mining camp visited, 184–85.

Lawyers, scarcity of in California, 92.

Lee County (Iowa), residence of gold seekers, 119.

Lee, Jason, missionary work, 17.

Liberty (Mo.), T. J. Farnham's letter published at, 20.

Liquor, drinking, by miners, 131–34, 192–97, 230–31; by Spanish, 247; by Indians, 295–304, 319–20, 324–26; on ocean steamship, 335–37; tragedy of Dr. Y——, 310–13.

Livermore, Robert, ranch of 69–70.

Livermore Valley, origin of name, 69.

Lodi (Wis.), residence of Steele, xviii.

Long Wharf, *Sir Charles Napier* arrives, 209.

Los Angeles, oranges raised, 14; Steele makes excursion to, 236–49.

Los Angeles County (Cal.), gold discovered in, 95.

Lucas, Robert, Governor of Iowa Territory, 7.

Lupton's Fort, as trading post, 27.

Lynching, attempted, 254–56; feared, 258; at Hangtown, 268–69; of Dr. Y——, 312.

Mack, ——, employed by Steele, 128.

McCord, Robert, member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121; Yuba River enterprise, 142–44, 149; Poorman's Creek enterprise, 199–200; Klamath enterprise, 204; American River enterprise, 206, 213–24; illness, 226–27, 229; Steele visits, 231.

McDonald, ——, anecdote of, 93–94.

McFarland, Garret, death, 211; characterized, 211–12.

McGee, ——, on Feather River expedition, 153, 159.

McLoughlin, Dr. John, builds Fort Vancouver, 37.

Marsh, Dr. ——, gives information on California, 15; emigrants reach ranch, 64–67; relations with, 67–75.
Marshall, James W., discovers gold, 97, 106–109, 228.
Martinez, Steele visits, 248.
Matlock, George, member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121; death, 145.
Matthews, ——, foreman of mining company, 216.
Meagher, Thomas F., Van Diemen's Land exile, 335.
Measles, epidemic among miners, 284.
Meeks, Joe, career as physician, 90–92.
Mengarini, Rev. Gregory, career sketched, 25.
Mexico, outbreak of revolution, 334.
Micheltorena, Manuel, Governor, relations with Sutter, 79; drives ambulance, 86; employs Joe Meeks, 90; insurrection against, 99–102.
Mirage, deceives emigrants, 43, 47–48.
Missions, fruit-raising at, in California, 84; entertain travelers, 84–85.
Missionaries, Jason Lee's work, 17; Catholic, to Flathead Indians, 23; preaching to miners, 306–308.
Missouri, journey of Bidwell to, 7–10; origin of Platte Purchase, 8; described, 8–12; California emigrants leave, 21.
Missouri Compromise, infringed, 8–9.
Missouri River, voyage of Bidwell on, 11–12.
Mohave Desert, route via, 18.
Mokelumne Hill, feud between American and Spanish elements, 251–52.
Mokelumne River, Steele visits, 251.
Monkeys, as article of food, 340–41.
Monterey, healthfulness of climate, 14; experiences of T. J. Farnham at, 17–19; residence of Thomas O. Larkin, 89, 91.
Mormons, discover gold, 109.
Mormon Island, mining operations, 206, 213–24; Steele visits, 229, 231.

Mount Diablo, emigrants pass, 64; ranch of Dr. Marsh near, 67; viewed by miners, 236.
Mount Shasta, viewed by miners, 177.
Mount Vernon (Mo.), residence of Steele, xvii.
Muir, John, friend of Bidwell, xiv.
Mules, Canadian trappers drive, 26.
Murders, discovered, 155–56; of negro barber, 254–55; at Placerville, 268–73; of Steele, attempted, 282–84; miners murdered, 290–91; Columbia Indian, 298–99; in San Francisco, 330.
Murphy, ——, share in mine feud, 265–67.
NEAL, Robert, story narrated, 312–13.
Nelson's Creek, miners pass, 163, 189.
Nevada City, Steele arrives at, xvi, 119–20; saloons of, 131; shooting affrays, 132–34; lawlessness, 200; burned, 201–202.
New Helvetia, name for Sutter's Fort, 106.
New Mexico, habits of gold miners, 95–96, 103.
Nicaragua, dispute with United States, 347–49.
Northern Light, Steele embarks on, 347; voyage to New York described, 350–52.
Nye, M. C., reports arrest of emigrants, 71; accompanies Bidwell, 72.
OCHOA, travelers pass, 346.
O'Donohue, ——, Van Diemen's Land exile, 335.
O'Fallon's Bluffs, emigrants pass, 32.
Ogden, Ed, sells claim, 127.
Ollendorff, Spanish text book, 248.
Ometepe Island, travelers pass, 344.
Onion Valley, sojourn at mining camp described, 189–97.
Oranges, in California, 14.
Oregon, American conquest planned, 17; California emigrants diverted to, 38.
Oregon Trail, as route of emigrants, 26; course indicated, 36–37.
Overton, Bill, lucubrations of, 36.

Oxen, join buffaloes, 32; difficulty of packing, 45; search for, 46-48; eaten, 53-56, 60.
Packsaddles, difficulties of emigrants with, 45-46.
Pah Ute Indians, as miners, 184; warfare narrated, 234-35; council described, 314-22. See also Indians.
Panama, gold seekers stranded at, 210.
Panama, Isthmus of, route to California via, 210.
Peoria, Oregon emigration company organized, 17.
Peyton, ——, abandons emigrant train, 38.
Physicians, scarcity of in California, 67, 90-92.
Phillips, ——, California experiences narrated, 134-37.
Pierce, Harrison, runaway sailor, 88.
Pinonero, habits described, 233-34.
Pioneer claims, operations described, 216-24.
Placer Cañon, miner murdered, 270.
Placerville, Indian village near, 234; crimes of violence, 268-73.
Platte Purchase, Bidwell resides in, xi; described, 8-12.
Platte River, route of emigrants via, 26.
Pocatello, Fort Hall near, 37.
Point, Rev. Nicolas, career sketched, 25.
Polygamy, practiced by Indians, 321.
Poorman's Creek, mining activities on, 161-63, 199.
Portneuf River, Fort Hall located on, 37.
Post office, at Sacramento, described, 205; 207-208; at Coloma, 305.
Prairie chickens, in Iowa Territory, 7.
Prattsville (N. Y.), Steele visits relatives, 352.
Prohibition Party, nominates Bidwell for Presidency, xiv.
Pruden, Victor, issues passport, 73.
Puma, tracks seen, 164.
Rancho Chico, home of Bidwell, xiii-xv.
Red River carts, Canadian trappers drive, 26.
Religion, of Pah Ute Indians, 322; service for miners, 306-308.

Robidoux, Joseph, founder of St. Joseph, 13; advice on California, 13–14.
Robinson, B. H., uncle of Steele, 326–27; family visited, 352.
Rock Creek, Indians fight battle, 234–35.
Rocky Mountain Fur Company, partners in, 34.
Rodgers, ——, abandons emigrant train, 38.
Roger Williams' Spring, at Nevada City, 122, 128.
Rolling Hills, encounter of Steele and Jesus Chico 224–25, 237.
Romaine, ——, English adventurer, 25.
Ruelle, Baptiste, discovers gold, 95; project for further discovery, 96–97.
Russian-American Fur Company, sells property in California, 77.
Rutherford, Walter, death, 211.
SACRAMENTO, on site of Sutter's Fort, 60; city founded, 105; Steele visits, 205–209, 212–13; operations of post office, 205, 207–208.
Sacramento Valley, James John reaches, 59; viewed by miners, 204–205.
Sagebrush, emigrants encounter, 43.
Sailors, runaway, in California, 19, 88–89.
St. Charles, residence of William L. Sublette, 34.
St. Joseph, founded by Robidoux, 13.
St. Louis, Bidwell visits, 11–12.
Saloons, of Nevada City, 131; shooting affrays, 132–34; promote lawlessness, 200, 268–73, 311–12.
Salt Lake, see Great Salt Lake.
Salinas River, route via, 241, 243.
San Andres, Steele visits, 251; experience narrated, 252–58.
San Blas, T. J. Farnham visits, 17; Americans imprisoned, 19.
San Carlos, fort, described, 344–45.
San Carlos River, travelers pass, 346.
Sandhill cranes, emigrants kill, 63.

Index

San Diego, center for trade in hides, 89.
Sandwich Islands, visit of John A. Sutter, 76.
San Francisco, ships deserted in harbor, 209; story of Vigilante régime, 330–34.
San Gabriel Mission, oranges raised, 14.
San Joaquin River, emigrants pass, 64; winter on, 69.
San Joaquin Valley, emigrants reach, 62–63; first settlement in, 66–67.
San José (Pueblo de San José), emigrants visit, 69; imprisoned, 71; released, 72.
San José Mission, emigrants arrested at, 71.
San Juan del Norte, see Greytown.
San Juan del Sur, Steele visits, 337–38.
San Juan River, descent of, 344–46.
Santa Anna, General, precipitates revolution in Mexico, 334, 337.
Santa Fé, trade from Missouri to, 13; John A. Sutter visits, 76.
Sapling Grove, as rendezvous, 15, 21–22.
Schallenberger, Moses, salvages wagons, 86–87.
Schools, Bidwell teaches, 10–13.
Scott, George, succumbs to strong drink, 230–31.
Scott's Bluffs, emigrants pass, 27, 33.
Sequoia gigantea, Bidwell discovers, 61.
Sexton, ——, nurses Steele, 130.
Shimmans, William E., member of overland party, 119; Klamath enterprise, 200, 207.
Shoshone Indians, friendship for whites, 53.
Sierra Nevada, Steele embarks on, 327–28.
Sierra Nevada Mountains, emigrants cross, 56–62; first crossing by Americans, 66.
Simpson, ——, abandons emigrant train, 38.
Sir Charles Napier, carries gold seekers to California, 209–10.
Sitka, visit of John A. Sutter, 76.
Slaves, negro, in mines, 260–63.
Slavery, dispute over Platte Purchase, 8–9.

Smith, Jedediah S., discovers South Pass, 34.

Smith, Peg Leg, story of, 276–77.

Snakes, in Platte Purchase, 10–11; in miners' cabins, 287–89.

Snake River, emigrant route via, 37.

Snow, depth of fall, 197–98.

Snyder's Bar, mining enterprise on, 229–32.

Soda Springs, emigrants pass, 27; party separates, 36–37.

Soper, P. O., mining experiences narrated, 278–84, 287; fears violence, 289; farewell interview, 326–27.

South Pass, discovery of, 34.

Spanish, friendly to Americans, 14; hospitality of, 83–85; Steele learns language, 238–40, 245, 248; Indians speak, 249; feud with Americans, 251–52, 264–67.

Spanish Flat, origin of name, 263–64; miners' feud, 264–67.

Stanislaus River, emigrants descend, 58–63; Steele visits, 251.

Stark, Christopher R., teaming experience, 198.

Starvation, experience described, 176–88.

Steamboats, travel on western rivers, 6, 11–12.

Steele, Edward D., writes letter, 227, 323; reunion with, 354.

Steele, Rev. John, career sketched, xv-xviii; arrival in California, 119–20; first employment in mines, 121–27; poisoned, 128–31; sells claim, 131; danger from grizzly, 139–40; employment with Fred Dinkler, 140–42, 145–48; Yuba River enterprise, 142–44, 149–51; expedition to Feather River, 144, 151–202; sluice washing, 203–204; visits Sacramento, 205–209; San Francisco, 209–12; Los Angeles, 236–49; American River enterprise, 206, 213–24; illness, 217, 224; befriends Jesus Chico, 224–25; visits, 237–48; reunion with John Steele, uncle, 227–28; partnership with, 228–33; terminated, 236;

learns Spanish, 238–40, 245, 248; prescribes for smallpox, 249–51; adventure at Mokelumne Hill, 251–54; with murderers, 253–58; gratitude of Indians, 259–60; in feud at Spanish Flat, 264–67; Texas Bar enterprise, 268–82; shooting affair narrated, 271–73; befriends P. O. Soper, 278–84; fears violence, 289–91; relations with Columbia Indians, 293–304; visit to Coloma, 305–307; Antoine Cañon enterprise, 308–13; attends Pah Ute Council, 314–22; returns to Wisconsin, 323–55.

Steele, John, uncle of author, visits California, 227; partnership with nephew, 228–33; returns to Missouri, 236; commends Elijah Barker, 260.

Steele, Loretta, writes letter, 227.

Steele, William, uncle of author, 227.

Stevens, Elisha, salvages wagons, 86; gold discoveries of, 87–88.

Stevenson, John, partner in Texas Bar enterprise, 268, 273–80.

Stokes, Dr. ——, encounter with Joe Meeks, 90–91.

Sublette, William, career sketched, 34.

Sugar Loaf Hill, miners camp near, 201.

Sutter, John A.; emigrants visit, 73–75; career of, 75–76; buys out Russians, 75–76; establishment of, 78–83; relations with Spanish officials, 78–79, 100–102; liberality, 80; business operations, 80–83, 103, 106, 107–109; refusal to outfit Ruelle, 96–97; sawmill visited, 228. See also Sutter's Fort.

Sutter's Fort, James John reaches, 60; establishment described, 74–83; as center of colony, 105; Steele visits, 206. See also John A. Sutter.

Sutterville, founded, 105–106.

Sweetwater River, route of emigrants via, 27.

T——, Charles, rascality of, 277–79, 281–84, 289.

T——, Uriah, rascality of, 277–79, 281–84, 289.

Tade, Anderson, member of overland party, 119; illness, 144; death, 150.

Taylor, William, missionary, 308.
Tchubo, son of Capitan Juan, see Thomas.
Texas Bar, operations at, 268–82.
Terry, Judge ——, corruption of, 331.
Thomas (Tchubo), son of Capitan Juan, story of, 293–305; 323–26.
Tobacco, appetite of emigrants for, 52–53.
Townsend, Dr. John, party brings wagons to California, 86; reports gold discoveries, 87; on gold seeking expedition, 103.
Trade wind, on American River, 218.
Trappers, of Rocky Mountains, characterized, 18.
Tribune, New York, copy purchased, 305.
Trinidad Bay, port for Klamath mines, 209, 212.
Truckee Meadows, route of emigrants via, 55.
Tule, described, 52.
UNION Valley, miners camp, 205.
VACCINATION, taught to Indians, 250–51; halts smallpox epidemic, 259.
Vallejo, General, arrests emigrants, 71; passport for Bidwell, 73.
Van Beneschoten, John, partner in Texas Bar enterprise, 268, 273–80.
Vancouver Barracks, established, 37.
Van Diemen's Land, British rebels exiled to, 335.
Virgin Bay, Steele's visit narrated, 339–44.
Volcano, eruption experienced, 342, 344.
Volcano (Cal.), Steele visits, 253.
WAGONS, first used in Rocky Mountains, 34; first brought to California, 86; emigrants abandon, 45.
Wait, Burton, member of overland party, 120.
Walker River, emigrants traverse, 56–57.
Wallingford, ——, saloonkeeper, 283; sells liquor to Indians, 295–98, 303–304.
Ward, George, expedition to Antoine Cañon, 308–10.
Ward, James, narrative of Feather River expedition, 161–63.

Ward, Thomas, rescues brother, 162.
Washington, mining camp, 149–50.
WATER, scarcity of, 44, 46, 59.
Weber Cañon, route via, 35.
West Point, Sacramento River steamboat, 212.
Westport (Westport Landing), name for Kansas City, 21, 26.
Western Emigration Society, organized, 14–15; project wrecked, 16–20.
White, ——, proprietor of Sacramento, 205.
Wild cat, emigrants eat, 60.
Wilson G. Hunt, Sacramento River steamboat, 209.
Wind River Mountains, emigrants view, 34.
Wolves, in Iowa Territory, 7; follow miners, 165–66; encountered, 179.
Wyeth, Nathaniel, establishes Fort Hall, 37.
Y——, Dr., prescribes for frozen man, 195; tragedy narrated, 310–13.
Yankee Jim, miners visit camp, 310; tragedy of Dr. Y——, 311–13.
Young, John L., member of overland party, 119; mess disbanded, 121.
Yuba Caps, miners pass, 160.
Yuba River, Steele hunts gold on, 142–44; mining camps on, 149–52.